

NORTHEAST COMMUNITY COLLEGE LIBRARY



91000808

973  
J12h  
v 4

2964(

NORTHEAST TECHNICAL COMMUNITY  
COLLEGE-LIBRARY



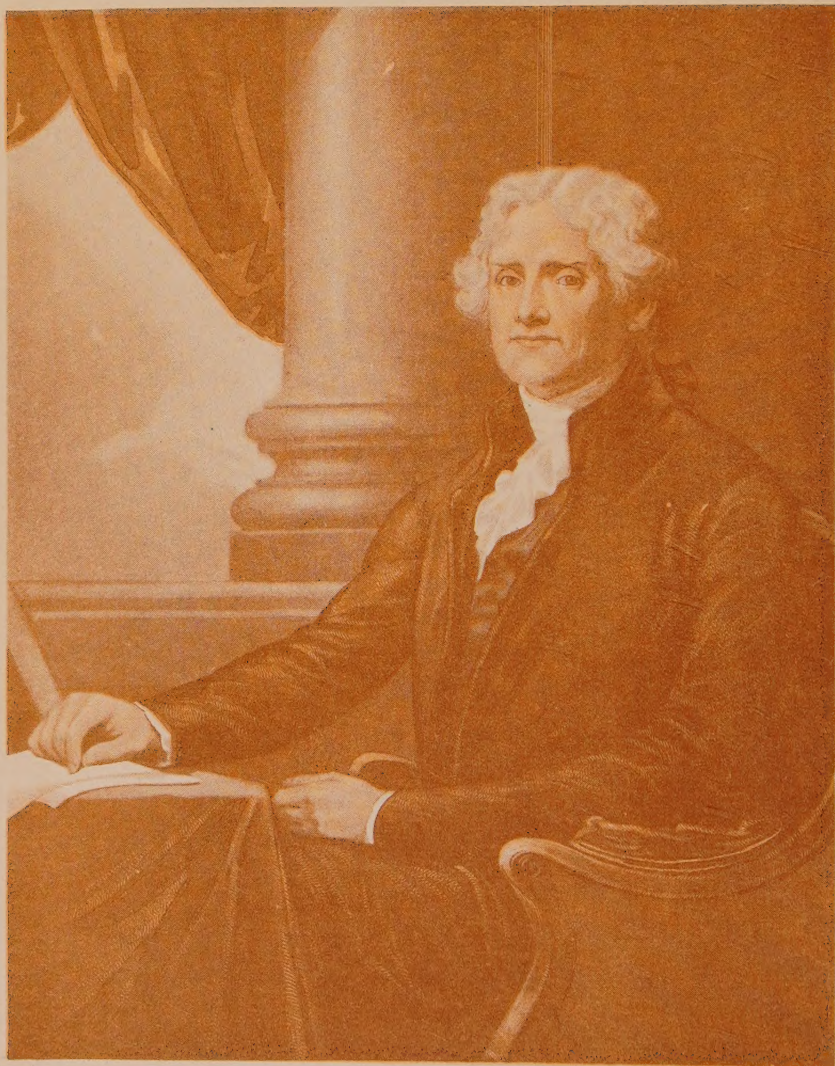






Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2024





Copyright 1917  
Whitman Publishing Co.

THOMAS JEFFERSON

From a Painting  
by George M. Schmidt

# HISTORY

of the

# AMERICAN NATION

BY

WILLIAM J. JACKMAN

JACOB H. PATTON

JOHN LORD

THEODORE ROOSEVELT

GEO. F. HOAR

JAMES BRYCE

GROVER CLEVELAND

CHAS. A. DANA

HORACE PORTER

ROSSITER JOHNSON

ROGER SHERMAN

JOHN HAY

HERBERT WELCH

GEO. WM. CURTIS

HENRY W. GRADY

JOHN H. VINCENT

HENRY CABOT LODGE

BENJ. F. TRACY, AND OTHERS

EDITION DE LUXE

VOLUME IV

973

J 125

V. 4

WESTERN PRESS ASSOCIATION, Publisher

COPYRIGHT 1916 BY  
**WHITMAN PUBLISHING Co.**  
RACINE • • CHICAGO

# CONTENTS.

## VOLUME IV.

---

### CHAPTER LII.

#### POLK'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

The President hopes for Peace—Santa Anna, 768. Hostilities to be renewed, 770. Troops withdrawn from General Taylor—Volunteers arrive at Monterey, 771. Santa Anna's Plans and Preparations, 772. Taylor advances to Agua Nueva, 773. Battle of Buena Vista, 774. The Mexican Chiefs Urrea and Romero, 788.

### CHAPTER LIII.

#### POLK'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Emigration to Oregon, 790. John C. Fremont; his explorations, 791. Difficulties with the Mexican Governor, 793. American Settlers in alarm, 794. California free—Monterey on the Pacific captured, 795. Commodores Sloat and Stockton—Expedition of Kearney, 796. Santa Fé taken; a Government organized, 797. Doniphan's Expedition, 798. El Paso taken, 800. Chihuahua occupied, 801. An Insurrection; its Suppression, 802. Trial of Fremont, 803.

### CHAPTER LIV.

#### POLK'S ADMINISTRATION—CONCLUDED.

Movement of Troops, 804. Vera Cruz invested, 805. Its Bombardment and Capitulation, 806. Santa Anna's Energy, 807. Battle of Cerro Gordo, 808. General Scott at Puebla—His Misunderstandings with the Authorities at Washington, 809. Dissensions in Mexico, 812. Scott's Manifesto, 813. Advance upon the Capital, 814. Battle of Contreras, 815. Of Churubusco, 816. Attempts to obtain Peace, 818. Conflict of Molino del Rey, 819. The Castle of Chapultepec captured, 820. Santa Anna again in the Field, 822. Treaty of Peace, 823. Conditions of the Peace—Discovery of Gold in California, 825. Death of John Quincy Adams, 826. Wilmot Proviso, 827. The Presidential Election—Death of Mr. Polk, 828.

## CHAPTER LV.

## TAYLOR AND FILLMORE'S ADMINISTRATION.

(Discussion on Slavery—Wilmot Proviso, 830. The Powers of the Constitution; their Application in the Territories, 832. The President's Message; its Recommendations, 834. Debate on the Omnibus Bill, 835. Death of Calhoun—Death of President Taylor—Fillmore Inaugurated, 836. The Fugitive Slave Law, 837. The Mormons; their Origin, 838. Troubles—Settlement in Utah—A Disunion Convention, 839. Lopez invades Cuba, 840. Search for Sir John Franklin—Dr. E. K. Kane, 841. Death of Henry Clay; of Daniel Webster; the Tripartite Treaty, 842.

## CHAPTER LVI.

## PIERCE'S ADMINISTRATION.

Purchase of the Mesilla Valley, 844. Treaty with Japan, 845. The Kansas-Nebraska Bill; the effects of the Measure, 846. Emigrants to Kansas, 847. Struggles and Conflicts, 848. James Buchanan, President, 850. The Contest continues in Kansas, 851. John Brown, 852. Platforms of Political Parties, 855.

## CHAPTER LVII.

## BUCHANAN'S ADMINISTRATION.

Traits of Character, North and South, 857. Comparative Intelligence in the Free and Slave States, 858. The two Systems—Illiteracy compared, 859. Influences of the same, 860. Benevolent Operations, 862. Change in the Slavery Discussion, 863. The Abolitionists, 864. Material Progress, 866. Compromises, 867. Republican Party, 868. Democratic Convention, 869. The Election, how received, 870. Intent of Personal Liberty Bills—Union Men, 871. Legislatures and Conventions, South, 872. Non-coercion; Border States; Finances, 873. Buchanan's Message, 874. Fort Sumter, 875. Yulee's Letter, 877. Mr. Lincoln's Journey, 878. Confederate Constitution; Fallacies, 879.

## CHAPTER LVIII.

## LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION.

The Inauguration, 880. Effect of the Inaugural, 881. Sumter Bombarded, 883. The President's call for Volunteers; Responses, 885. Spirit of Loyalty, 886. Riot in Baltimore, 887. Confederate Congress at Richmond, 888. Loyalty in Tennessee and Missouri, 889. Advance into Virginia; Death of Ellsworth, 890. Proclamations; Instructions to United States Ministers abroad, 891. English Neutrality, 892. Big Bethel Skirmish, 893. West Virginia freed of Confederates, 894. Battle of Bull Run, 895. Missouri, 898. Battle of Wilson's Creek; Death of Lyon, 899. Fremont's Proclamation, 901. Kentucky's Legislation, 902. Finances and the Army, 903. Ball's Bluff Disaster, 904. Hatteras Expedition, 905. Capture of Hilton Head, 906. Soldiers and Money, 907.

## CHAPTER LVIII—CONTINUED.

## LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION.

Capture of Mason and Slidell, the Confederate Envoys to Great Britain and France, 907-a. Amicable Settlement of Controversy with Great Britain, 908. Preparations for War in Canada, 908. Battle of Belmont, 909. Confederate Strategy at Cumberland Gap, 909. Battle of Mill Spring, 910. Special Message from Jefferson Davis, 911. Cameron Favors Emancipation of Slaves, 912. Movement of Union Army, 912. Stanton Succeeds Cameron as Secretary of War, 912. Grant's Campaign on the Tennessee and Cumberland, 913. Capture of Forts Henry and Donelson, 913-914. Details of the Engagements, 914-917. Confederates Evacuate Bowling Green and Columbus, 917.

## CHAPTER LIX.

## LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Burnside's Expedition to North Carolina, 918. Battle of Pea Ridge, 919. Capture of New Madrid and Island No. 10, 921. Battle of Pittsburg Landing, or Shiloh, 923-925. Capture of New Orleans, 926. Death of Admiral Foote; Battle of River Iron-clads, 930. Evacuation of Corinth, 931. Plans of Movements on Richmond, 932. The Merrimac and Monitor Duel, 933. Contrabands, 936.

## CHAPTER LX.

## LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Movement of the Army of the Potomac, 937. Evacuation of Manassas, 938. Yorktown, Siege of, 939. Battle of Williamsburg, 941. Sanitary Commission, 942. Excitement in Richmond; Conscription Law, 943. Generals Banks and Jackson in the Valley, 944. The Chickahominy; Battle of Fair Oaks, 945. Lee in command, 946. Battle of Cold Harbor, 947. Change of Base, 949. Battle of Malvern Hill, 950. Harrison's Landing, 952. Cedar Mountain, 953. Second Battle of Bull Run, 955. Lee invades Maryland, 956. Harper's Ferry captured, 957. Battle of Antietam, 958. Lee retreats, 960. McClellan's slowness; his removal, 961. Burnside in command; Battle of Fredericksburg, 962.

## CHAPTER LXI.

## LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Invasion of Kentucky; Battle of Perryville, 964. Battle of Iuka; Preliminary Proclamation, 965. Opposition; the Slave's Hope, 966. Battle of Murfreesboro, 967. Confederate Failures, 968. Sherman on the Yazoo, 969. Capture of Fort Hindman; President's Message, 970. Finances; Northern Industries, 971. Confederate Finances, 972. Battle of Chancellorville, 973. Death of "Stonewall" Jackson, 974.

## CHAPTER LXII.

## LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Lee's Advance North, 976. Crosses the Potomac, 977. Hooker resigns; Meade in command, 978. Battle of Gettysburg, 979-984. Lee's retreat, 985. Vicksburg; Victories, 986. Vicksburg and Port Hudson captured, 987. Naval Expedition, 988. The Draft and Riot, 989. French Protestant Address, 990. Colored Soldiers—National Banks, 991.

## CHAPTER LXIII.

## LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

The March to Chattanooga, 992. The Battle; Chickamauga, 993. Burnside; Knoxville, 994. Battle above the Clouds, 995. Bragg's defeat, 996. Marauders in Missouri, 997. Red River Expedition; Fort Pillow Massacre, 998. Grant; Lieutenant-General; Position of Affairs, 999. Sherman flanks Johnston; he falls back, 1000. Death of Bishop Polk; Kenesaw Mountain, 1001. Hood in command; Battles, 1002. Death of McPherson; Railways broken, 1003. "Atlanta ours;" March to the Sea; The Christmas Gift; Orders, 1004-1005.

## CHAPTER LXIV.

## LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Grant's choice of Subordinates, 1006. Battles in the Wilderness, 1007-1010. Butler at Bermuda Hundred, 1009. Confederate repulses; Movement to the James, 1010. Early in the Valley, 1011. Sheridan in command; his ride, 1013. The Mine; Capture of Mobile, 1014. Outrages in Missouri; Wilmington captured, 1015. Hood on the march, 1016. Battle of Nashville; Hood's defeat, 1017. Union Men; Conscription Soldiers; Women, 1018.

## CHAPTER LXV.

## LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Grant's design; Platforms of Parties, 1019. Second Inauguration, 1020. Disposition of Union Forces, 1021. Lee's Plans, 1022. Battle, Five Forks, 1023. Lee surrenders; Richmond on fire and occupied, 1024. Jefferson Davis captured; Columbia burned, 1025. Johnston surrenders, 1026. The Assassination, 1026. Andrew Johnson; Booth shot—Mr. Lincoln, Grant and Sherman; Interview, 1027. Last reviews; Union loss in the Rebellion, 1028. Blockade raised; Old Flag on Sumter, 1029. Amnesty Proclamation; The Kearsage and the Alabama, 1030. Lord John Russell's Protest; Louis Napoleon, 1031. Article XIII.; The Telegraph, Article XIV., 1032. Reconstruction, 1033-1044. Nebraska; Impeachment, 1045. Treaty with China; Presidential Election, 1046.

## CHAPTER LII.

### POLK'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

The President hopes for Peace.—Santa Anna.—Hostilities to be renewed.—Troops withdrawn from General Taylor.—Letter from General Scott.—Volunteers arrive at Monterey.—Despatches intercepted.—Santa Anna's Plans and Preparations.—Taylor advances to Agua Nueva.—Battle of Buena Vista.—Its Consequences.

CHAP. LII. THOSE in power at Washington had hoped, indeed, it was  
1846. confidently predicted, that the war would be ended within "ninety" or "one hundred and twenty days" from its commencement, and a peace concluded, that "should give indemnity for the past and security for the future." These desirable ends were to be attained by treaty, through the means of that incomparable patriot, Santa Anna, then an exile in Havana, who promised, for a certain consideration, if restored to authority in Mexico, to exert his influence in favor of peace. A secret messenger from Washington had made to the "illustrious exile" overtures to this effect, about the time that General Taylor was ordered to the Rio Grande; the special act which led to hostilities.<sup>1</sup>

Dec. In his next annual message the President gives some information on this subject. "Santa Anna," said that document, "had expressed his regret that he had subverted the Federal Constitution of his country," and

<sup>1</sup> Benton's "Thirty Years' View," Vol. ii. pp. 561 and 681-2.



Robt Fulton

“that he was now in favor of its restoration.” He was also opposed to a monarchy, or “European interference in the affairs of his country.” The President cherished the hope that the exiled chief would “see the ruinous consequences to Mexico of a war with the United States, and that it would be his interest to favor peace;” and further the Message said, that Paredes, then President of Mexico, was “a soldier by profession, and a monarchist in principle;” the sworn enemy of the United States, and urgent to prosecute the war. Santa Anna, on the contrary, was in favor of peace, and only wanted a few millions of dollars to bring about that object so dear to his patriotism; hence the hopes that the war would be brought to a close in three or four months. It was with this expectation that the President, in a special message, asked of Congress an appropriation of two millions of dollars “in order to restore peace, and to advance a portion of the consideration money, for any cession of territory” which Mexico might make. It was also in accordance with this arrangement, that, on the very day Congress, at his suggestion, recognized the “existence of the war,” he issued an order to Commodore Connor, who was in command of the fleet in the Gulf, to permit Santa Anna and his suite to return to Mexico. The latter availed himself of this passport to land at Vera Cruz.

CHAP.  
LII.  
1846.

Aug.  
4.

May  
13.

Aug.  
8.

President Polk had been duped. Santa Anna never intended to fulfil his promise, except so far as to forward his own selfish ends. Instead of endeavoring to conciliate the hostile countries and obtain peace, he devoted all his energies to arouse the war spirit of his countrymen; called upon them to rally under his banner and save their nationality; issued flaming manifestos expressing the most intense hatred of the people of the United States. and his righteous indignation at the wrongs imposed on his country by the “perfidious Yankees.”

CHAP.  
LII.

1846.

Dec.

His extravagant professions of patriotism were not without effect; his countrymen deposed Paredes, and elected him President. Though they had been unfortunate in the field, their spirits revived, and in a few months he had an army of twenty thousand men concentrated at San Luis Potosi.

Sept.

Meanwhile General Wool had marched from San Antonio. His indefatigable labors had converted the volunteers under his care into well-drilled soldiers. Part of their way was through a region but thinly inhabited and without roads, and across a desert in which they suffered much for water. A laborious march of six weeks brought him to Monclova, seventy miles from Monterey—here he learned of the capture of the latter place. It was now arranged that he should take position in a fertile district in the province of Durango, that would enable him to obtain supplies for his own men, and the army under General Taylor. The inhabitants cheerfully furnished provisions, for which they were paid promptly, and in truth received more favor than they had recently experienced at the hands of their own rulers, as General Wool kept his men under strict discipline and scrupulously protected the persons and property of the Mexicans.

Nov.  
15.

The cessation of hostilities, by orders from Washington, ceased on the 13th of November. Two days later General Worth took possession of Saltillo, the capital of Coahuila, and General Taylor himself, leaving a garrison in Monterey under General Butler, marched toward the coast in order to attack Tampico, but as that place had already surrendered to Commodore Connor, he took possession of Victoria, the capital of Tamaulipas.

Dec.  
29.

The United States government now prepared to invade Mexico by way of Vera Cruz. Just as General Taylor was ready to commence active operations, General Scott was about to sail for that place with the

intention of capturing it, and then, if peace could not be obtained, to march upon the city of Mexico itself. CHAP.  
LII.

To carry out the plan of operations, it was necessary to increase the force under General Scott's immediate control. Troops in sufficient numbers could not be drawn from the United States, and a portion of Taylor's army was ordered to join him before Vera Cruz. He thus in a private letter expresses his generous sympathies with the latter: "My dear General," says he, "I shall be obliged to take from you most of the gallant officers and men whom you have so long and so nobly commanded. I am afraid that I shall, by imperious necessity—the approach of the yellow fever on the Gulf coast—reduce you, for a time, to remain on the defensive. This will be infinitely painful to you, and, for that reason, distressing to me. But I rely upon your patriotism to submit to the temporary sacrifice with cheerfulness. No man can better afford to do so. Recent victories place you on that high eminence." 1846.

General Taylor, though deeply disappointed, at once complied with the orders of the government, and detached Generals Worth and Quitman with their divisions and the greater part of the volunteers brought by General Wool: in truth, the flower of his army. These troops were speedily on their march from Saltillo toward the Gulf coast. Thus Taylor was left with a very small force. During the month of January, and a part of February, reinforcements of volunteers arrived from the United States, increasing his army to about six thousand; but after garrisoning Monterey and Saltillo, he had only four thousand seven hundred effective men, of whom only six hundred were regulars. 1847

General Scott sent Lieutenant Richey and a guard of men with a despatch to General Taylor. The Lieutenant imprudently left his men, went near a Mexican village, was lassoed, dragged from his horse and murdered,

CHAP. and his despatches sent to Santa Anna. From these the  
LII. Mexican chief learned the plan for invading his country.

1847. He promptly decided upon his course of action—a judicious one. Trusting that the strength of Vera Cruz, and of the Castle San Juan d’Ulloa, would long resist the enemy, and even if they both should be captured, that the fortified places along the road would still retard the advance of the Americans upon the capital, he determined to direct all his force against Taylor, who was now weakened by the loss of the greater part of his army.

Santa Anna’s difficulties were almost insurmountable. The city of Mexico was in confusion, torn by factions. He took most extraordinary and illegal measures to enlist men and obtain the means for their support; raised money by forced loans; made the church property contribute its share of the public expense; the Priests protested and appealed to the superstitions of the people; he immediately seized one of their number, the most factious, and threw him into prison, and the rest were intimidated. Thus, for nearly four months, he exercised an arbitrary, energetic, and iron rule. With a well-organized army of twenty-three thousand men, and twenty pieces of artillery, he commenced his march for San Luis Potosi in the direction of Saltillo, and within sixty miles south of that place he halted and prepared for battle.

Jan.  
26.

Rumors reached General Wool that Santa Anna was approaching Saltillo. Major Borland was sent with thirty dragoons to reconnoitre; he was joined on his way by Major Gaines and Captain Cassius M. Clay, with another company of thirty-five men. No enemy appeared, and they pushed on during the day, and carelessly encamped for the night, but, in the morning, found themselves surrounded by one thousand horsemen under the Mexican General Minon. They were taken prisoners, and Santa Anna sent them, as the first fruits of the campaign, to be paraded through the streets of the city of Mexico.

General Taylor now advanced from Monterey, and established his head-quarters at Saltillo. Leaving there his stores, he made a rapid march to Agua Nueva, eighteen miles in advance, on the road to San Luis Potosi, thus to secure the southern extremity of the defile through the Sierra Nevada, rather than the northern one at Monterey. At the former point the Mexicans must fight or starve, because of the barrenness of the country in their rear; while, had he remained at Monterey, Santa Anna could have had his head-quarters at Saltillo, and drawn his supplies from that comparatively fertile district.

CHAP.  
LII.

1847.

Scouts reported that General Minon with a large body of cavalry was to the left of Agua Nueva, and that the American position could be turned. Companies of dragoons from time to time were sent in different directions to reconnoitre. They at length learned from a "Mexican, dressed as a peon," that Santa Anna had arrived in the neighborhood with twenty thousand men, and that he intended to attack the Americans the next morning.

The clouds of dust toward the east, and the signal fires that blazed upon the tops of the distant hills, seemed to confirm the report. But that daring Texan ranger, Major McCulloch, was not satisfied; and, accompanied by some dozen volunteers, he determined to ascertain the truth of the "peon's" story. They pushed on across a desert of thirty-six miles to Encarnacion, where they arrived at midnight, and found the enemy in force. Sending back all his men, save one, McCulloch entered their lines, and, undetected, went from point to point, obtained more correct information of their numbers, then passed out, and escaped to Agua Nueva.

On the reception of this intelligence, Taylor, leaving a small guard as an outpost, retired up the valley in expectation that Santa Anna in hot haste would pursue him, while he himself should await his approach at a point, which, in passing, he had already noticed. The conjecture was correct.

CHAP.  
LII.

1847.

Santa Anna knew well the position of the Americans. He thought they would not retreat, and he resolved to surprise them. But between him and Agua Nueva there intervened fifty miles, the last thirty-six of which were across a desert. His soldiers were each supplied with water and provisions; in the morning the march commenced, and at noon they entered the desert; in the night they halted for a while to refresh, and at dawn they were to attack the unsuspecting foe. The march was rapid and secret; the silence of the desert was not disturbed—not a signal was used, not a drum beat. After so much toil he was sadly disappointed; his enemy had disappeared. He firmly believed the Americans were in full flight, in order to avoid a battle. Some days before he had sent General Minon with his cavalry across the mountains, to their rear, and he now hoped that Minon would be able to hold the fugitives in check until he himself could come up with his full force. He halted only to refresh his wearied soldiers, and then pursued with all his vigor.

The ground chosen by General Taylor on which to make a stand, was the pass—since so famous—known among the Mexicans as Las Angosturas, or the Narrows. It was at the north end of a valley, about twelve miles long, and formed by mountains on either side. Here an ascent rises to a plateau, a little more than a mile wide, on each side of which rugged mountains, inaccessible to artillery or cavalry, rise from two to three thousand feet. Numerous ravines or deep gullies, formed by the torrents rushing from the mountains during the rainy season, rendered the surface in front and on the sides very uneven. Neither flank could be turned except by light troops clambering up the mountains. The plateau was somewhat rough, with here and there open and smooth places, as well as clumps of thorny chaparral. The road through

the defile passes much nearer to the west than to the east side of the Narrows. On this plateau, one mile south of the hacienda or plantation known as Buena Vista, the American army awaited the approach of the Mexicans.

CHAP.  
LII.  
1847.

Early the following morning clouds of dust, extending far down the valley to the south, made known that the Mexican army was near and in motion. Soon after, its cavalry came in sight and halted for the infantry and artillery to come up.

The long roll of the drum called the Americans to arms; they obeyed the call with hearty cheers. It was the anniversary of the birth of Washington, and on the impulse his name was adopted as their watchword. They were placed under peculiar circumstances. A few months before, they were quietly engaged in the avocations of civil life; enthusiasm had induced them to volunteer, and now they were on foreign soil, far from their homes. With the exception of a few hundreds, they were all for the first time going into battle, with the prospect that to them defeat would be certain ruin; they were about to meet an army, in its numbers nearly five to one of their own. In the unequal contest, their only hope was in their own bravery, and in the skill of their commander.

Feb.  
22.

The cautious Taylor had gone to Saltillo, six miles distant, to superintend in person the defences designed to secure the stores from capture. General Wool was left in temporary command at the Narrows, and he directed the arrangements of the troops.

Captain Washington's battery was placed to command the road or pass, the key to the position of the army. Colonel Hardin's First Illinois regiment was on a ridge to the left of the pass, and Colonel McKee's Second Kentucky on another ridge in their rear. To the left beyond these was posted the Second Illinois, under Colonel Bissell, while still further in the same direction, under the mountain, were stationed Colonels Yell and Humphrey

CHAP. Marshall, with the Arkansas and Kentucky volunteers.  
LII.  
1847. The remainder of the army, including Lane's Indiana brigade; the Mississippi riflemen, Colonel Jefferson Davis; two squadrons of dragoons, and Sherman and Bragg's batteries of flying artillery, were placed in reserve on the rear of the plateau.

During the morning, and beyond the range of the American artillery, the main body of the Mexicans was also arranged in order of battle. Their right, a battery of sixteen-pounders, rested on the base of the mountains. These guns were manned by the San Patricio regiment, composed of Irish and German deserters from the American army. Two divisions, Pacheco's and Lombardini's, extended in the rear of this battery; guns, twelve and eight-pounders, were posted to the left, and a battalion occupied a hill in advance of the main line, directly opposite the pass. Their cavalry was stationed in the rear of either flank, and to be unencumbered, the baggage of the whole army was left many miles in the rear.

About noon a Mexican officer brought a note to General Taylor. In pompous terms Santa Anna summoned him to surrender at discretion, and trust himself to be treated "with the consideration belonging to the Mexican character." In a brief and courteous note the American commander declined the proposal.

Santa Anna noticed that the mountains to the east, beyond the American left, were unguarded, and he sent General Ampudia, with light troops, around a spur to ascend them from the south side. The movement was observed, and Colonel Marshall dismounted his own riflemen and those of the Indiana battalion, and commenced to ascend to the crest of the ridge. As the lines gradually approached each other, skirmishing began. The Mexicans kept up a continuous roar of musketry, while the Ameri-

cans lay among the rocks, whence could be heard the sharp crack of their rifles.

CHAP.  
LII.

1847.

The Mexican batteries occasionally threw a shot, but the Americans on the plateau remained silent; they wished a closer conflict. They were not idle, however, but threw up temporary works to protect Washington's battery in front, and also to the right of the pass close up to the base of the mountain. Thus passed the afternoon, with only severe skirmishing on the mountain sides. When night came on the Americans were recalled to the plain. The Mexicans remained in position, and the night passed without any important demonstration on either side.

General Minon had passed through the defile, Palomas Adentro, and in the afternoon appeared with his numerous cavalry upon the plains north of Saltillo. Here Santa Anna sent him orders to remain, and be in readiness to fall upon the American forces, which he promised to either capture or put to flight the next morning.

The appearance of Minon caused no little anxiety, and General Taylor, after night-fall, hastened to Saltillo with aid, to assure himself that any attack upon the stores would be repelled.

During the night Ampudia was reinforced; and at dawn he renewed the attack, and stretched his line farther to the right; but Colonel Marshall, with a portion of the Illinois volunteers, maintained his position, though pressed by superior numbers.

Feb  
23.

Soon after sunrise, movements in the Mexican ranks indicated that a grand attack was in contemplation. Their strength was nearly all thrown toward the American left, where, owing to the smallness of their number and the extent of the ground, the troops were placed at greater intervals. The San Patricio battery was also brought forward and placed on the ridge in front of the

CHAP.  
LII.  
1847. plateau, while three powerful columns of attack were arranged—columns composed of the best soldiers of the army, and led by its most experienced leaders. As the foremost column advanced, General Lane ordered Captain O'Brien to hold them in check with his guns, and the Second Indiana regiment to support him. O'Brien's shot ploughed through their ranks from front to rear, yet the Mexicans crowded on till the head of the column was literally broken, and thrown into confusion, and refused to advance. Lane now ordered O'Brien to move forward fifty yards nearer the enemy. The Indiana regiment followed, but came within range of a Mexican battery, which opened upon their flank. They were ordered to retreat from the face of such overpowering numbers; the retreat unfortunately soon became a flight, which extended quite beyond the enemy's guns. Now upon O'Brien's artillery was concentrated the entire fire of the Mexican battery and Pacheco's column. His horses were soon disabled; not a man of his company but was either killed or wounded; he was forced to fall back and leave to the enemy one of his guns as a trophy—a trophy which they seemed to appreciate very highly.

These forces now advanced and formed a juncture with the division of Lombardini; the entire body then moved against the plateau, and opened a heavy fire upon the Second Illinois regiment under Colonel Bissell. Four companies of Arkansas volunteers had been directed to dismount and gain the plateau. They reached it in the midst of this conflict, but they soon became panic-stricken and fled. The Illinoisians, now unsupported, slowly fell back. While this was in progress, a portion of the Kentuckians were forced back, and Ampudia, with his light troops, came down the mountain and completely turned the American left. The third heavy column, under Moray Villamil, pressed on against Washington's battery on the road. He waited till they came within close range, then

poured in his shot with surprising rapidity and terrible effect; the head of the column melted away before the storm, the whole mass was thrown into confusion, swayed from side to side, then broke and fled, leaving the plain covered with a multitude of slain and wounded.

CHAP.  
LII.  
1847.

Just as the three columns of the enemy had failed to force the American centre on the plateau, General Taylor, accompanied by fresh troops, arrived upon the field; his presence was needed. He brought with him every available man that could be spared from Saltillo. They were Colonel May's dragoons, a portion of the Mississippi riflemen, and of the Arkansas cavalry.

The natural advantages of the position had been lost; success depended alone upon the bravery of the troops; many of the officers had fallen, and whole companies of the volunteers, both infantry and horse, had left the field, and were in disastrous retreat toward Buena Vista, in spite of the efforts of General Wood and Colonel Davis, and other officers to restrain them.

The Mexican infantry, supported by their fine cavalry, right and left, which made shock after shock, continued to press on. By great exertions Davis rallied the majority of his regiment, and a part of the Second Indiana; they advanced at a quick step, but silent until within rifle shot; then gave the approaching foe a destructive fire. The Mexicans did not slacken their pace till they came almost to the edge of the last ravine between them and their enemy, when they halted. The Americans came up to the opposite edge; thus for a while the two forces confronted each other and fired across the ravine. Presently a shout along the American line rose high and clear above the din; they delivered their fire, dashed into the ravine, lingered a moment to reload, then rose upon the opposite crest, in the face of the enemy, and with defiant shouts urged home their fire more fearfully than ever. The

CHAP  
LII.

1847.

Mexicans, apparently astounded at the apparition which was sending death through their ranks, wavered for a few minutes, and then in utter confusion rolled back upon the column which was advancing to their support.

Scarcely was Colonel Davis free from this when he was assailed by a force coming in another direction. A thousand lancers who had not been engaged approached along the broad ridge; they were well supported by infantry. To meet this new enemy, Davis was aided by the Second and Third Indiana regiments. He extended his line across the ridge, stationed Captain Sherman on his left, and placed his men in the form of the letter V, the opening toward the approaching lancers. They commenced to advance at a gallop as if to charge their way through the centre. But as they drew near they gradually slackened their pace; they expected the Americans would fire, and then they would ride them down before they could reload their pieces. The latter fired not a gun, but awaited their approach. At length the lancers came to a walk at the opening of the angle. The silence seemed to fill them with awe; they were within eighty yards of a thousand marksmen, every one of whom could take deliberate aim. At the word, every musket and rifle was poised—a moment intervened—then went forth the messengers of death. The entire front ranks of the lancers were riddled, not a ball appeared to have failed of its errand. This was followed by grape and canister from Sherman's battery. The dead and wounded men and horses made a barricade of struggling life, over which they could not pass. Even at this time, their overpowering numbers, had it not been for this obstruction, might have enabled them to break through the line and gain the road in the rear of the plateau, and thus have modified or changed the fortune of the day. But those in the rear were appalled at the destruction of their companions, and the whole mass fled headlong from the field. As in every

other instance the Americans, for want of numbers and cavalry, could not pursue them, and the fugitives passed south of the plateau to be re-formed for another attack.

CHAP.  
LII.  
1847.

Meantime a squadron of cavalry under Torrejon skirted the mountain base to the left, and penetrated to Buena Vista, whither the commands of Marshall and Yell had retired. General Taylor sent all the cavalry he could spare, under Colonel May, to reinforce that point. Torrejon fell back on his approach, and May returned to the plateau. Then Torrejon advanced again: this time the volunteers received him with a scattering fire; but the Mexicans, confident in numbers, rode on rapidly toward the hacienda; there they were held in check by a portion of the two battalions. It was here that Colonel Yell, as he made a charge, was killed at the head of his men. Torrejon himself was wounded, and Colonel May made his appearance again, this time with two field-pieces, and the Mexicans separated into two divisions and retreated out of danger.

On the plateau the battle had raged in one continuous cannonade: the Mexicans had on the ridge in front, a battery of eighteen and twenty-four pounders, principally manned by the San Patricio regiment, yet they could not silence the American guns. At this point there was a temporary lull in the storm.

But on the east side of the valley, to the rear of the plateau, a severe conflict was in progress. One of the Mexican divisions retreating from Buena Vista, had united with a large force sent by Santa Anna to make its way on the extreme left round to the American rear.

Colonel May with his dragoons and a portion of the Illinoisans and Indianians was engaged in the unequal contest. General Taylor sent to his aid a portion of the artillery and the dragoons, with some of the volunteer cavalry.

CHAP.  
LII.

1847.

They soon accomplished the object by cutting off the retreat of the Mexicans who had passed so far beyond the American left. They were driven against the base of the mountain and thrown into inextricable confusion. Bragg advanced within close canister range, and with their wonted rapidity his guns played upon them: the shot tore and crashed through the bewildered multitude, and those next the mountain endeavored to escape by clambering up its sides. The whole force, about five thousand, became utterly helpless, while the wounded and dying were increasing at a fearful rate: the horses frantic with pain and terror added to the confusion. A few minutes more and they must have laid down their arms; at this crisis, as if to stay the arm of death, a white flag was seen approaching from General Taylor's position. When it came near the artillery ceased to fire.

Three Mexican officers had appeared as if for a parley; they professed to bear a message from the Mexican chief. When brought into the presence of General Taylor they wished to know "what he wanted." The reply was the surrender of the Mexican army. They asked time for consideration; the trick was not suspected, and the request was granted. A messenger bearing a white flag was hastened with orders to Captain Bragg to cease firing, as the Mexicans were about to lay down their arms.

General Wool was deputed to accompany the officers to Santa Anna, who took care not to be seen. As Wool perceived that the Mexicans continued to fire, though the Americans had ceased, he declared the conference at an end, and returned to his own army.

Meanwhile, under the protection of the flag of peace, the body of Mexicans in trouble stealthily crept along the base of the mountain out of danger, and joined their main army south of the plateau. Thus, whether designed or not, Santa Anna had extricated his soldiers, and had also learned from his spies—the Mexican officers—the small

number of American troops—only three regiments of infantry and three guns—on the plateau, and that their main portion was far to the left, whither they had driven the Mexican right wing. Shielding his men from sight by ravines and spurs of the mountain, he had for hours been concentrating all his strength for a final assault upon the American central position at the pass. At several points he had met with partial success; but in the main his plans had been frustrated by the indomitable courage, rapid movements, and hard fighting of his opponents.

Having concentrated his forces, he now brought his reserve into action, aided by the troops of the right wing which had just been rescued from peril. The whole force—twelve thousand strong—the front regiments composed of veterans, with General Perez at their head, moved up the ascent from the valley. The scattered companies (Illinois and Kentucky volunteers) in advance of the line were taken by surprise at the sudden appearance of the enemy in such numbers; the enemy, which an hour or two before they had seen in utter confusion, retreating from the field. The multitude, pouring in volley after volley of musketry, pressed on and compelled these companies to retire toward the lines. O'Brien was left almost alone with his artillery, yet for a time he maintained his place. His shot buried themselves in the ranks of the approaching enemy; but the mass closed up the gaps and steadily came nearer and nearer. For round shot he substituted canister, and they were checked for a time; but it was their last struggle to secure the field. Trusting to numbers and heedless of death, the mass again moved on. Presently there was not an infantry soldier to support the guns, nor a horse to draw them; still the gunners stood to their places, and retreated only as their pieces recoiled. At length overtaken, every officer or gunner either killed

CHAP.  
LII.  
1847.

CHAP. or wounded, O'Brien himself among the latter, they aban-  
LII. ——— doned them to the enemy.

1847.

Meanwhile the companies of volunteers took refuge in a deep ravine to the right of the pass. The Mexicans lined its crest and kept upon them a continuous volley of musketry, to which they could scarcely reply, while their cavalry dashed forward to the mouth of the ravine to cut off their retreat. Fortunately the route of the cavalry brought them within range of Washington's battery at the pass. His guns were immediately brought to bear upon them; they recoiled, relinquished their object, and began to retreat, while, by throwing shot over the heads of the volunteers who were now moving out, he harassed them exceedingly. The Mexican infantry, now unopposed, descended into the ravine, and cruelly murdered every wounded man they could find.

It was in this desperate encounter that Colonels Hardin, McKee, and Henry Clay, junior, (son of the distinguished statesman,) and great numbers of brave and generous men were slain.

The crisis of the conflict was near. O'Brien overcome there was no one to oppose; and, encouraged by their success, the Mexicans pushed on with unusual vigor. At the commencement of this last attack the Americans were more or less scattered over the plateau and on the extremes of the field; but the heavy roar of the battle made known that the issue of the day was about to be determined, and they hastened, of their own accord, to the post of danger.

It was an hour of intense anxiety to General Taylor, as he saw this unexpected host advance in such order and with such determination. The battle had already lasted eight hours; the toil of so many rapid movements over the rough field had wearied his men, while the approaching enemy's force was fresh, and in number four to one

of his own. Was it possible to hold them in check till his own troops could come up? He sent messenger after messenger to urge them on. In one direction could be seen Bragg, and in another Sherman, driving with whip and spur the jaded horses attached to their batteries; while in the distance to the left of the pass, could be seen the Mississippians and Indianians, under their officers Davis and Lane, rapidly advancing, now in sight and now disappearing as they crossed the deep ravines.

CHAP.  
LII.

1847.

Bragg was the first to come up. As he drew near he sent to ask for infantry to support his guns; but Taylor could only send him word that not a man could be had; he must fight to the death. The Mexicans were rushing on, and before he could unlimber his guns they were within a few yards of their muzzles; but his men seemed to be inspired with an energy beyond human, and with a rapidity greater than ever, discharge followed discharge. The enemy faltered, as if waiting for them to cease but for a moment, that they might rush forward and capture them. No such moment was granted; they still hesitated, and were thrown into confusion. By this time Sherman came up and opened with his wonted effect; in a few minutes more Washington's battery at the pass moved forward and did the same. Davis and Lane had just closed with the enemy's right flank and commenced to pour in their fire. The Mexicans recoiled on all sides; they could not carry the pass; hope seemed to desert every breast, and pell-mell they rushed from the field.

Thus ended the battle of Buena Vista. It had lasted ten hours; had been a series of encounters, in different parts of the field, each one severe in itself, but indecisive in result. Never before had an American army contended with such odds, and under disadvantages so great. It was won by the superior handling of the flying artillery, which thinned and broke the foremost ranks of the enemy before they could bring their superior numbers to bear.

CHAP. When repulsed, they invariably fell back out of danger,  
LII. to be again re-formed for another attack, while the Amer-

1847. icans, for want of cavalry and sufficient numbers, could not pursue and disperse them beyond the power of rallying. On the part of the latter the day was one of unremitting toil; their fewness of numbers, the extent of the field, the roughness of the ground, and the numerous attacks, forced them to be continually in rapid and laborious motion. General Taylor was in the midst of flying balls for eight hours, only one of which passed through his coat. He was ably seconded by his officers, not one of whom swerved from a post of danger nor neglected a duty—especially could this be said of General Wool, who seemed to be at every point where he was specially needed. The superior skill with which the American guns were handled was due to the exertions of the West Point officers, who spared no effort to infuse into the ranks their own spirit of discipline; and equal honor is due to the volunteers, who, with but few exceptions, cheerfully submitted to the requisite drudgery of drill.

The Mexicans hoped to win the battle by musketry and charges of cavalry; their heavy guns they did not bring upon the field, but placed them in battery in front of the pass.

The influence of this battle was more important than any one of the war. It destroyed that fictitious prestige which Santa Anna had obtained over his countrymen by his vain boastings and unsparing censure of their previous commanders, and it greatly increased their dread of the invader's artillery; henceforth they met them only from behind defences, and avoided them in the open field.

Night closed in. The Americans took every precaution to repel the attack which was expected the next morning. Strong pickets were posted to prevent the enemy from passing round to the right or left. The troops

having been supplied with their rations, remained on the field for the night. Fresh companies were brought from the rear to supply the place of those who took charge of the wounded, who were carried in wagons to Saltillo. The loss of the day had been two hundred and sixty-seven killed, and four hundred and fifty-six wounded.

CHAP.  
LII.  
1847.

The morning dawned, but not a Mexican could be seen. Santa Anna had retreated, leaving his wounded to their fate, and his dead unburied. More than two thousand of his men, including many officers of high rank, lay scattered over the field.

Feb.  
24.

Scouts hurried on to reconnoitre; in an hour or two they returned with information that he was far on his way toward Agua Nueva. General Taylor and his staff immediately moved on in the same direction, but sent in advance Major Bliss, with a proposition to Santa Anna for an exchange of prisoners, and a request that he would send for his wounded, as well as another assurance that the American government was desirous of peace. An exchange of prisoners took place, but as Santa Anna professed to have no means to remove his wounded, he left them to be cared for by the Americans; as to the proposition for peace he replied, in his usual style of bravado, that he should prosecute the war until the invaders had left his country.

The Mexican soldiers were in a truly deplorable condition; they were without hospital supplies, and almost literally without food, and no means to obtain it—a desert before them, and a victorious enemy in their rear. Santa Anna urged on his retreat toward San Luis Potosi, whence one month before he had set out sure of victory; desertions had now reduced his great army to a mere remnant, and that discouraged by defeat, while confidence in his generalship was gone. In addition, signs of another revolution were appearing in the city of Mexico, by which his enemies might triumph.

CHAP.  
LII.

1847. General Taylor advanced to Agua Nueva; thence two  
Feb. days later he detached Colonel Belknap, with the dra-  
27. goons and a regiment of infantry—transported in wagons  
across the desert—to surprise the rear guard of the Mexi-  
can army at Encarnacion. The feat was successfully ac-  
complished. All along the way from the battle-field were  
found multitudes of poor Mexican soldiers, left by their  
heartless companions to die of their wounds, hunger, and  
fatigue. As soon as possible the humane Taylor sent  
them provisions, and had those that could be removed  
conveyed to Saltillo and placed under the care of the  
American surgeons.

While these operations were in progress, the two  
Mexican generals, Urrea and Romero, with their corps  
of cavalry, had appeared on the line of communication  
between Saltillo and the Rio Grande. They had cap-  
tured some wagons, taken some prisoners, and spread  
alarm all along the line. A sufficient force was now  
sent to chastise them, but they rapidly retreated out of  
danger by the pass of Tula, leaving the valley of the Rio  
Grande to the Americans.

General Taylor, by easy stages, retraced his steps,  
and encamped once more at the Walnut Springs, near  
Mar. Monterey.  
30.

Whilst the line of communication was broken, vague  
rumors reached the United States, first, that Santa Anna  
was approaching Monterey with a large army, then, that  
the American army had been overpowered. These ap-  
prehensions were greatly increased by a volunteer Colonel  
at Camargo, who, in his alarm, sent an urgent appeal for  
fifty thousand men to be sent immediately to the seat of  
war. Presently came intelligence of the battle of Buena  
Vista; and the intense anxiety of the people was  
changed to admiration for the men who, under such try-  
ing circumstances, had maintained the honor of their

country. Gen. Taylor, of whom so little had been known before the commencement of this war, rose higher and higher in public estimation. Some months later, when he returned to the United States, he was received with demonstrations of the highest respect.

It was an era in the education of young women in the United States, when in 1837 Mount Holyoke Seminary, in Massachusetts, began its grand work. This institution was the outgrowth of the untiring and consecrated zeal of Miss Mary Lyon, who was born in the town of Buckland in that State. Miss Lyon was very remarkable for her power of acquiring knowledge, and also for her skill in imparting the same to pupils. Because of limited means, her very hard lot in obtaining an education—which she did by her own exertions—suggested the field of her usefulness and appealed to her generous nature, and she devised a plan by which she hoped that girls situated as she had been could in part support themselves while being educated, by performing a portion of the household work of the institution.

In that day—to their shame be it said—legislatures appropriated funds only to colleges for young men, and Miss Lyon was forced to appeal to private Christian benevolence. After years of her persistent efforts, funds were secured; a substantial building was erected and equipped; and Holyoke opened its first session with eighty pupils. Miss Lyon presided over the institution till her death in 1849; this was after thirty-five years of active teaching and unremitting toil.

The reasons for founding Holyoke Seminary still remained, and that this fact elicited the practical sympathy of the benevolent, let our Vassars, Wellesleys, Smiths, Pittsburg College, and many other institutions for young women bear witness.

CHAP.  
LII.  
1847.

1797.  
Feb.  
28.

1849.

## CHAPTER LIII.

### POLK'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

**Emigration to Oregon.**—John C. Fremont; his Explorations; his difficulties with the Mexican Governor.—American Settlers in alarm.—California free from Mexican Rule.—Monterey on the Pacific captured.—Commodores Sloat and Stockton.—Kearney's Expedition.—Santa Fé taken; a Government organized.—Doniphan's Expedition.—Various Conflicts.—Chihuahua occupied.—An Insurrection; its Suppression.—Trial of Fremont.

CHAP.  
LIII.

1842. **THE** importance of securing Oregon by settlement had especially attracted the attention of the people of the Western States. The stories of hunters, and the glowing descriptions given in the newspapers of that distant region, imbued the minds of the adventurous with an enthusiasm as ardent as that which glowed in the breasts of the earlier explorers and settlers of this country two and a half centuries before. A thousand emigrants, consisting of men, their wives and children, driving before them their flocks and herds, their only weapon the trusty rifle—alike to protect from savage violence and to procure sustenance from the wandering droves of buffalo and deer—set out from the confines of Missouri. They passed up the long eastern slope of the Rocky Mountains, over them through the South Pass, thence to Lewis' River and down it to the Columbia, on whose shores they found a resting place, after a toilsome journey of six months, through an untrodden mountainous region.

These emigrants were followed the next year by

another company, consisting of two thousand, who passed over the same route.

CHAP.  
LIII.

These enterprising settlers, with the few who had preceded them, labored under many difficulties, as the United States government did not exercise the jurisdiction which it claimed over the territory. A bill introduced into the Senate, granted lands to actual settlers, and made provision to maintain their rights as citizens by extending over them the laws of the territory of Iowa. Though this bill passed only the Senate, it gave encouragement to those persons who desired to emigrate to the banks of the Columbia. A colony thus planted by private enterprise, and thus slightly encouraged by the government, became the germ of another State, (Oregon) now added to the Union.

1843.

1859.

It was in connection with this awakened spirit of emigration that Colonel John C. Fremont, then a lieutenant, made his first exploring expedition. He was a young man, once friendless and unknown, but had risen by his own talents and industry, and on the recommendation of Poinsett, then Secretary of War, had been appointed in the Topographical Engineers by President Jackson. Fremont solicited and obtained permission from the government to explore the Rocky Mountains and their passes, but at this time with special reference to the South Pass and its vicinity. In six months he returned; he had accurately determined the location of that Pass, which now became a fixed point in the path of emigration to Oregon.

Soon after his return, Fremont again asked for orders to prosecute still further explorations in that distant region. They were given; but after his preparations were made, and he and his party had reached the frontiers of Missouri, the government countermanded his orders, on

CHAP. the singular plea that he had armed his party, in addition  
LIII. to their rifles, with a small mountain howitzer. But for-  
1843. tunately for science and the country, the letter containing  
the order came to Mrs. Fremont, whom he had requested  
to examine his letters and forward only those he ought to  
receive. She deemed the government countermand one  
that he ought not to receive, and Fremont knew nothing  
of its existence until he returned from his eventful tour.  
On his return he was received with honor, his conduct  
approved, and on the recommendation of the Secretary  
of War, William Wilkins, the brevet of captain was con-  
ferred upon him by President Tyler.

He had received special orders to survey the route of  
travel from the frontiers of Missouri to the tide-waters  
of the Columbia. This was accomplished by the first of  
November, after six months' labor, though often he di-  
verged from the main route to make useful observations.  
He now resolved to return immediately, and when on the  
way to explore the vast territory which must lie between  
the route he had passed over and the Pacific. To pass  
through this region in midwinter was no easy matter.  
Soon deep snows appeared on the highlands, and the party  
descended into the valley, now known as the Great Basin,  
out of which flows no stream. On the west, the moun-  
tains loomed up with their snowy tops; everything was  
strange; the Indians, terrified at the approach of white  
men, fled: a desert appeared, and with it the vision of  
starvation and death. No place could they find, as they  
had hoped, where they might winter and derive their  
sustenance from hunting the animals of the forest. They  
passed down to the latitude of San Francisco, as found by  
astronomical observations; but between them and that  
place, the nearest point where they could obtain aid from  
civilized man, rose mountains, their snowy tops piercing  
the clouds; their sides frowning precipices thousands of  
feet high. No Indian would act as a guide through their

passes. The whole party, by excessive toil and want of food, were reduced to skeletons, both men and horses. Finally they "crawled over the Sierra Nevada," and arrived at the head-waters of the Sacramento. "In this eventful exploration, all the great features of the western slope of our continent were brought to light—the Great Salt Lake, the Utah Lake, the Little Salt Lake—at all which places, then desert, the Mormons now are; the Sierra Nevada, then solitary in the snow, now crowded with Americans, digging gold from its banks; the beautiful valleys of the Sacramento and San Joaquin, then alive with wild horses, elk, deer, and wild fowls, now smiling with American cultivation. The Great Basin itself, and its contents; the Three Parks; the approximation of the great rivers which, rising together in the central region of the Rocky Mountains, go off east and west towards the rising and the setting sun,—all these, and other strange features of a new region, more Asiatic than American, were brought to light, and revealed to public view in the results of this exploration."<sup>1</sup>

In May, Fremont set out on his third expedition to explore still further the Great West. There were now indications that war would soon result between Mexico and the United States. But to avoid exciting the suspicions of the Mexicans, he obtained permission from General De Castro, commandant at Monterey on the Pacific, to pass the following winter in the uninhabitable portion of the valley of the San Joaquin. But before long, De Castro professed to believe that his object was not scientific exploration, but to excite a rebellion among the American settlers, and he undertook to either drive him out of the country or capture the whole party. A messenger, secretly sent by the United States consul at

<sup>1</sup> Benton's Thirty Years' View, Vol. ii. Chap. 134.

CHAP. Monterey, Mr. Larkin, suddenly appeared in his camp and  
LIII. informed him of these unfriendly designs. Fremont im-

1845. mediately chose a strong position on a mountain, raised the American flag, and he and his sixty determined followers resolved to sell their lives as dearly as possible. After waiting four days, as De Castro hesitated to attack his camp, he came down from the mountain and set out for Oregon through the region of the Tlamath lakes.

1846. During the former part of May he was overtaken by a United States officer, Lieutenant Gillespie, who brought a letter of introduction from James Buchanan, Secretary of State, and verbal instructions to the effect that he should counteract any foreign scheme on California, and conciliate the good will of the inhabitants toward the United States.

Fremont was now on the confines of Oregon, but at once he turned back to California. When he arrived in the valley of the Sacramento, he found the whole community in a state of great excitement. Among the Mexicans two projects were in contemplation: one to massacre the American settlers; the other to place California under British protection, and thus shield themselves against the arms of the United States in case of a war with Mexico.

A deputation from the American settlers hastened to lay before him a statement of these facts; and, in addition, that the Indians had been incited against them; that General De Castro was on his march to attack them, and also that a British fleet was daily expected upon the coast.

Though the countries were at peace when he left home, the approach of De Castro with a hostile army demanded decisive measures, and Fremont accepted the trust in self-defence. The American settlers flocked to his camp, brought their horses, their ammunition, their provisions,

and submitted cheerfully to the strictness of military discipline. CHAP.  
LIII.

In one month's time, after a few conflicts, Mexican rule was at an end in northern California. The flag of independence was raised, its device a grizzly bear—indicative of indomitable courage—while General De Castro was retreating, and all other schemes entirely prostrated. 1846.  
June  
1.  
July  
4.

Commodore Sloat, commanding on the Pacific, received directions from the Secretary of the Navy, George Bancroft. "If you ascertain with certainty," said the Secretary, "that Mexico has declared war against the United States, you will at once possess yourself of the port of San Francisco, and blockade or occupy such other ports as your force may permit."

The commodore was at Mazatlan, and a British squadron, under Admiral Seymour, was there also. The former, from certain indications, suspected he was watched; if so, he determined to foil the admiral. Accordingly, he weighed anchor and sailed west as if going to the Sandwich Islands, Seymour followed, but in the night Sloat tacked and ran up the coast to Monterey, while Seymour continued on to the islands. Sloat arrived at Monterey and offered the usual civilities to the town; they were declined on a frivolous excuse. It was evident that his presence was not agreeable. Five days later he heard of the movements of Fremont and the settlers, and he at once took possession of the town. Then he sent a courier to the latter, who hastened with his mounted men to join the commodore. They were mutually astonished on finding that neither of them had acted under direct orders from their own government. The flag of independent California was now supplanted by the colors of the United States. July  
7.

Commodore Stockton in a few days came into the harbor, to whom Sloat turned over the command, as he himself intended to return home. The next day came Admiral July  
15.

CHAP. Seymour in his flag-ship. He saw with surprise the  
LIII. American flag floating over the town, the American  
1846. riflemen encamped near by, and an American fleet in the  
Aug. harbor. One month later Stockton and Fremont took  
17. possession of Los Angeles, the capital of Upper California.

California had been for some time in a half revolutionary state. The inhabitants were dissatisfied with Mexican rule. Some wished to join the United States, and some to seek the protection of Great Britain. The conciliatory course pursued by Fremont did much in winning the Californians to the American standard.

In the latter part of July the "Army of the West," under Colonel Kearney, consisting of eighteen hundred men, was concentrated near Bent's Fort on the Arkansas. The Secretary of War, William L. Marcy, had given him instructions to take possession of New Mexico and Upper California, to establish therein temporary civil governments, to make known to the inhabitants the designs of the United States to provide them with free government, and that they would be called upon to elect representatives to their own territorial Legislatures.

The expedition moved rapidly toward Santa Fé, the capital of New Mexico. The population of that province was miscellaneous in its character; Indians, New Mexicans, (a mixture of Spanish and Indian,) some American settlers, and a few of Spanish blood. The mass of the population was half-civilized, by whom honor and morality were reckoned of little worth. They were cowardly, treacherous and cruel; ignorant and superstitious. The Indians, for the most part, held the idolatrous notions of the ancient Aztecs, and were so debased that a slight reward would insure the committal of almost any crime.

The governor, Armigo, a bad man and a bad ruler, made an effort to meet the invaders. He assembled about four thousand men, of all grades, and, with six field-pieces,

took position in a mountain gorge some fifteen miles in advance of Santa Fé; but for some reason, best known to himself, he abandoned his strong post and rapidly retreated southward, carrying off his own property, and leaving the people and the public interests to take care of themselves.

CHAP.  
LIII.  
1846.

Kearney entered Santa Fé and was courteously received by the lieutenant governor, Vigil. The following day the people assembled in the plaza and had made known to them the designs of the United States government. The majority professed themselves pleased with the change. In a few days the chiefs of the Pueblo Indians also gave in their adhesion to the new order of things.

Aug.  
18.

Kearney erected and garrisoned a fort, and in the meanwhile made an excursion one hundred and fifty miles to the south to meet a force which a false rumor said was marching against him. On his return he established a government, at the head of which he placed Charles Bent, a worthy citizen of the territory, as governor. After pledging himself to protect the inhabitants against the inroads of the Eutaw and Navajoe Indians, he set out for California. His company consisted of only three hundred dragoons, but on the route, when near the river Gila, he met a messenger—the celebrated guide and pioneer Kit Carson—who brought intelligence of what had recently taken place in California under Stockton and Fremont. He now sent back two companies of dragoons under Major Sumner, and continued on himself with the remainder.

Thus, within three months after the orders had been issued at Washington, a force had been organized; a march of a thousand miles accomplished; and territory subdued, and a new government established on apparently a stable foundation. A half-civilized and vicious population are not fit subjects for self-government, and this in a short time proved a failure. Had Kearney remained to preserve discipline, that result might have

CHAP. been different, or at least delayed. The town was filled  
 LIII. with gambling-houses, and grog-shops, and haunts of  
 1846. every vice, while the free manners of the volunteers excited against themselves the hatred of the inhabitants, who laid their plans for revenge, and only waited an opportunity to carry them into effect.

Colonel Kearney gave directions to Colonel Doniphan, whom he left at Santa Fé, to enter the country of the Navajoe Indians, living on the waters of the Gulf of  
 Nov. California, and induce them to make peace. Doniphan, with a thousand Missouri volunteers, in three divisions and by as many routes, entered the territory of the hostile tribe, and obtained from them a treaty, by which they agreed to refrain from depredations upon the people of New Mexico. This march, so remarkable, was made in the winter, across mountains covered with snow, and through an unknown region inhabited by barbarous tribes. Doniphan delayed but a short time in negotiating with the Indians, then he passed on to the south-east to meet General Wool at Chihuahua.

The absence of so many men with Doniphan afforded the looked-for opportunity to commence an insurrection in New Mexico. The plot was deep laid and kept a profound secret. Suddenly Governor Bent was murdered,  
 1847. with five other officers of the territory, some of whom  
 Jan. were Mexicans, at Taos, fifty miles north of Santa Fé.  
 14. The same day witnessed the murder of many others in the upper valley of the Rio Grande.

Colonel Price, of the Missouri mounted volunteers, was at Santa Fé with the main force, while detachments were scattered over the country grazing their horses on the plains. With only three hundred and fifty men, Price hastened to meet the insurgents, in the valley of Taos.  
 Jan. They, numbering about fifteen hundred, took position in  
 23.

a pass of the road through the highlands. Price routed them and continued his march up the valley; but the insurgents made a stand at another pass, still stronger by nature, so narrow that three men could scarcely march abreast, while it was protected by rugged mountains covered with cedars growing in the crevices of the rocks. An advance party clambered up through the cedars, and the terrified Mexicans took to flight.

CHAP.  
LIII.

1847.

Their principal place of defence was taken in a few days, and the rebellion suppressed. Peace was promised only on the condition that the ringleaders should be given up; this was complied with, and several of them were hanged at San Fernando: a hard fate for those who were fighting against the invaders of their country.

Colonel Doniphan, accompanied by a large number of merchant wagons, crossed without loss a region destitute of water or grass—a desert ninety miles in extent, known as the Jornada del Muerto, or Journey of Death—the road marked by the graves of former travellers and the bones of beasts of burden. In one instance his men and animals nearly gave out from thirst, when providentially a rain relieved them; a remarkable occurrence in itself, as at that season of the year rain seldom falls in that region.

He learned that the Mexicans, under General Heredia, who commanded in the North-western Department, were awaiting his approach; nothing daunted he dashed on. His force, including merchants, numbered but eight hundred and fifty-six effective men, nearly all backwoodsmen; all mounted, armed with rifles, and good marksmen; untrammelled by discipline, each one fought as he listed. Near Brazito, in the valley of the Rio Grande, they dismounted and were scattered seeking wood and water, when the scouts brought word that the Mexicans were approaching. The alarm was sounded;

1846.  
Dec.  
26.

CHAP. all flew to arms, and amid a din of shouts fell into ranks  
LIII.  
———— as best they could. The Mexicans—more than twelve  
1846. hundred strong, and with a piece of artillery—drew near; an officer bearing a black flag made his appearance, and in a magniloquent speech, declaring that no quarter would be given, summoned the Missourians to surrender. Doniphan's answer was characteristic and defiant.

The Mexican cavalry extended far to the right and left, while the infantry, firing volleys of musketry, advanced in front. Presently they came within rifle range, and the backwoodsmen threw away scarcely a shot. The whole body of the enemy broke and fled—they lost nearly two hundred men, killed and wounded, in a few minutes. Only seven Americans were wounded.

Two days later Doniphan entered the beautiful village of El Paso, "where a neat cultivation, a comfortable people, fields, orchards, and vineyards, and a hospitable reception, offered the rest and refreshment which toils, and dangers, and victory had won." There he waited till artillery could join him from Santa Fé, and then commenced his march upon Chihuahua.

1847.  
Feb.  
8.

The Mexicans kept out of the way; but after a march of nineteen days it was ascertained that they had taken position at a pass of the Sacramento, a small branch of the Rio Grande. Here General Herredia made a stand with a force of four thousand men, protected by intrenchments across the pass, and on the neighboring hills, but defences were of little avail against men who never hesitated to attack an enemy. Doniphan suddenly diverted his route from the main road, forced his way round to the flank of their advance, and before the Mexicans could bring their guns to bear, he was in full play upon them with his own artillery. Their cavalry as well as artillery, fell back and retired across the river. Now the intrenchments were to be forced; this was done in true backwoods style. Each man rushed on and fought on

his own responsibility; some rode along the intrenchments seeking a place to enter, while others dismounted and crept up to pick off their defenders. The Mexicans fled from the presence of their assailants, who leaped over the works and secured every place within reach. Meanwhile a party of mounted volunteers crossed the river to storm, on horseback, a battery which crowned the hill on the opposite side. This singular engagement cost the Mexicans three hundred killed and a greater number wounded, while the Missourians lost but one killed, one mortally wounded, and a few disabled. The enemy, completely routed, abandoned every thing; the officers fled toward the south, and the common soldiers to the mountains.

CHAP.  
LIII.1847.  
Feb.  
28.

The following day Doniphan, without opposition, entered Chihuahua—a city of nearly thirty thousand inhabitants—raised the American flag on its citadel, and, in the name of his government, took possession of the province. He was in a very perilous situation, with only a thousand men, from among whom almost every vestige of discipline had vanished. In this city were many American merchants, most of whom were wealthy. Doniphan's measures were prudent and just, and they conciliated the inhabitants.

Mar.  
2.

On the 27th of April he set out for Saltillo, where he arrived in a month without opposition, except from a few Indians. From Saltillo he marched to Matamoras; and as the term of his men was about to expire, they were taken to New Orleans and there discharged.

April.

The most remarkable expedition on record. They had passed over nearly five thousand miles, three thousand of which was a march through an unknown and hostile country swarming with foes. They returned in one year; no body of troops had ever in so short a time passed over so much space or surmounted so many obstacles.

Fremont was the military commandant of California,

CHAP. under a commission from Commodore Stockton. Soon  
LIII.  
after the Commodore sailed from San Francisco to Monterey, and thence to San Diego. The recently established  
1847. government was placed in peril; a deep laid plot was in  
Aug. train, and only a favorable opportunity was wanting to commence the insurrection. Fremont, by a rapid and secret march of one hundred and fifty miles, surprised and captured the main leader of the insurgents, Don J. Pico, who had been a prisoner, and had violated his parole. A court martial sentenced him to death. Fremont remitted the sentence, and thus won Pico's influence and aid in tranquilizing the country. He also endeavored to conciliate the inhabitants, and made no attack upon the hostile parties, which hovered around his march. He came up with the main Mexican force, under Don Andreas Pico, brother of the one whom he had just pardoned. He sent them a summons to surrender, and they agreed to deliver up their artillery and promised to return to their homes. They were not required to take the oath of allegiance, until a treaty of peace should be concluded between the United States and Mexico.

Dec. Commodore Stockton now learned of the approach of General Kearney. The latter had experienced great difficulties on his march; attacked by the enemy, he was placed in desperate circumstances at San Pasqual; his provisions gone, his horses dead, his mules disabled, and most of his men sick, while the enemy in great numbers completely surrounded his camp and held possession of all the roads. Three brave men—Kit Carson, Lieutenant Beales, of the Navy, and an Indian—volunteered to find their way to San Diego, thirty miles distant, and inform Commodore Stockton of Kearney's peril. The Commodore promptly sent assistance, at whose appearance the enemy retired and Kearney was enabled to reach San Diego.

Jan.  
8.

A month later took place the battle at the river San

Gabriel. Then General Flores, chief of the insurgents, sent a flag of truce, proposing a cessation of hostilities in California, and to let the sovereignty of the territory be determined by the result of the war between the United States and Mexico. Stockton refused to accede to the request, and continued his march. Another flag of truce came in. Now it was offered to surrender the town of Los Angeles, if the rights of the people and their property should be preserved. On these conditions the capital of Upper California was surrendered a second time, and the possession of the country more firmly established than before the insurrection.

CHAP.  
LIII.

1848.

Difficulties now arose among the officers in relation to the question who should be governor. But recent orders from Washington relieved Stockton of his civil functions, which devolved upon General Kearney as he happened to be on the ground. In truth, the civil government was only in name beyond the range of the American cannon.

Mar.

Fremont, however, refused to recognize the authority of Kearney, and was brought to trial charged with disobedience of orders and mutiny. The court found him guilty and sentenced him to be dismissed from the service. The President did not approve of all the findings of the court; but, because of "the peculiar circumstances of the case and his previous meritorious and valuable services," remitted the sentence and restored him to his rank in the army. Fremont would not accept the clemency of the President, and thus admit that the proceedings of the court were just; he at once resigned his commission. In a few weeks he set out at his own expense on his fourth tour of exploration in the Rocky Mountains.

## CHAPTER LIV.

### POLK'S ADMINISTRATION—CONCLUDED.

Movement of Troops.—Vera Cruz invested.—Its Bombardment and Capitulation.—Santa Anna's Energy.—Battle of Cerro Gordo.—General Scott at Puebla.—His Misunderstandings with the Authorities at Washington.—Commissioner Trist.—Dissensions in Mexico.—Scott's Manifesto.—Reinforcements.—Advance upon the Capital.—El Penon turned.—Battle of Contreras; of Churubusco.—Attempts to obtain Peace.—Conflict of Molino del Rey.—The Castle of Chapultepec captured.—The American Army enters the City.—Santa Anna again in the Field; dismissed from the Mexican Service.—Treaty of Peace.—Its Conditions.—Evacuation of Mexico.—Misunderstanding among the American Officers.—Discovery of Gold in California.—The Effects.—Death of John Quincy Adams.—The Wilmot Proviso.—The Presidential Election.

CHAP. WHILE these events were in progress, plans were  
LIV. formed and partially executed to invade Mexico from  
1846. the east; to secure Vera Cruz, the best harbor on the coast, and then, if peace could not be obtained, to march upon the capital itself.

Numerous delays impeded operations, and it was near the end of November before General Scott left Washington for the seat of war. The quarter-master, General Jessup, was already at New Orleans preparing transports for the troops; and communications were held with Commodore Connor in relation to the co-operation of the fleet. The troops, as already mentioned, drawn from Taylor's command, were speedily concentrated at convenient points on the coast, but the want of transports prevented their embarkation. The place of rendezvous was at the island

of Lobos, about one hundred and twenty-five miles north of Vera Cruz. At length the transports were ready, the troops, about twelve thousand strong, embarked, and, on the morning of the 9th of March, began to land near Vera Cruz. No enemy appeared to dispute the movement.

CHAP.  
LIV.  
1847.

That city contained about fifteen thousand inhabitants. It was protected on its land side by numerous defences, while on the side of the Gulf, upon a reef, stood the Castle of San Juan d'Ulloa, garrisoned by a thousand men, who manned one hundred and twenty-eight heavy guns; the strongest fortification on the continent, with the exception of Quebec.

The next morning General Worth was ordered to commence the line of investment, which extended nearly six miles. The Mexicans appeared to oppose, but a few shots from the cannon dispersed them. The weather was excessively hot and sultry, and the march through the deep sand laborious and tedious.

The Governor of the State of Vera Cruz now issued a proclamation, calling upon the inhabitants of the town to defend themselves, while he should retire to harass the invaders and cut off their supplies. He soon appeared among the sand hills, but after a short skirmish, he thought it prudent to keep out of sight. The cannonading from the town and castle was incessant, but without much execution, owing to the distance. The men kept close in their trenches and did not reply. The munitions which had recently arrived were now landed, and the Americans were ready to commence the bombardment. General Scott summoned the city to surrender, stipulating, in order to save the lives and property of the inhabitants, that no batteries should be placed in the town to attack the Castle, unless the latter fired upon the Americans. General Morales, the commander of both the city and castle refused to comply with the summons.

CHAP.  
LIV.

1847.  
Mar.  
22.

At 4 o'clock in the afternoon the bombardment commenced. The Mexicans replied with every gun and mortar that could be brought to bear from the city and castle. Some of the smaller American vessels crept near and with their heavy guns added to the uproar; thus through the night the contest lasted. Other guns were brought, and other batteries erected within a thousand yards of the devoted city. They were hidden behind the chaparral; this was cleared away, and revealed to the besieged a new foe—the battery of Paixhan guns. Their astonishment was great; upon this new enemy who had dared to take position so near, they resolutely directed all their force for many hours. They fired rapidly and with precision, but failed to silence this battery.

How terrific was this storm! Twenty-one heavy guns pouring forth an incessant stream of balls and shells; the heavy shot broke through the solid walls and crashed through the houses, while the shells, still more terrible, scattered ruin and death in the streets, and burned every building that would burn. With scarcely any intermission, for four days this horrid work continued. The inhabitants, to be out of range, left their homes, and helplessly crowded upon the mole at the north part of the town, but ere long the balls began to come nearer and nearer. For twelve days the town had been invested, and its provisions were now nearly exhausted. The foreign residents implored their consuls to aid them. The latter obtained permission of Morales to send a flag of truce to General Scott. They asked a cessation of hostilities till the foreigners, with their families, and the Mexican women and children could leave the place. The request was properly refused, on the ground that permission had once been offered the foreign residents to leave the town, and that the petition to receive attention must come from the Mexican governor.

The American batteries re-opened as soon as the flag

entered the city, and continued during the night. At break of day another flag was seen approaching. The firing ceased. Negotiations commenced, and were terminated by the surrender of Vera Cruz, the Castle, the armaments and stores of each, and the soldiers as prisoners of war. These terms were agreed to by General Scott and Commodore Perry, who was in command of the squadron. The soldiers were to march out, with the honors of war, lay down their arms and be dismissed on their parole. The inhabitants were guaranteed in their civil and religious rights.

CHAP.  
LIV,  
1847.

Mar.  
29.

General Worth was appointed governor of Vera Cruz. The advance division, under General Twiggs, soon commenced the march for the city of Mexico by way of Jalapa. The whole army amounted to only eight thousand five hundred men, but there preceded them an influence, that threw a shadow of despondency over the minds of the Mexicans.

April  
8.

Santa Anna had been very active since his defeat at Buena Vista, (which he labored hard to prove to his countrymen was not a defeat at all; he only retreated for want of provisions,) in collecting another army, and he had already arrived with twelve thousand men at Cerro Gordo, a mountain pass at the eastern edge of the Cordilleras. In the midst of revolutions and distractions, he marched to this, the first of the "Thermopylæ," which he promised his countrymen to defend. Within two months after a disastrous defeat, without money, without the prestige of success, he had quelled an insurrection and established his own power, raised an army, portions of which had marched from three hundred to six hundred miles; had constructed the fortifications at Cerro Gordo, and made a ditch twelve miles long to supply the camp with water.

CHAP.  
LIV.

1847.  
April  
18.

The positions of the Mexicans were reconnoitred, and the attack commenced by the division under General Twiggs, sent to turn their position. Presently the whole front was assailed. The Americans seized another hill, El Telegrapho, up the sides of which they dragged heavy cannon, and began to play upon the defences of Cerro Gordo. The Mexicans replied with great vigor. During this mutual cannonade, Colonel Harney led his men rapidly down into the valley between the hills, and began to ascend the slope toward the defences on the top. The declivity was steep and rugged, and soon the entire fire of the battery was directed against these new assailants, but fortunately the balls for the most part passed over their heads. But without wavering they pressed up, carried one breastwork after another, until they presented themselves at the last, the strongest on the summit. Santa Anna, a short hour before, had ordered General Vasquez to defend this post to the last extremity, and he bravely stood his ground, and fell while encouraging his men; confusion ensued, and the struggle was soon ended. The Americans poured in a stream of balls, forced their way through the breastwork, and then charged with the bayonet. The garrison fled down the western slope in the direction of Jalapa. Twiggs had passed round the hill, their retreat was cut off and they made prisoners. At this moment Santa Anna returned. He was enraged beyond bounds at seeing the discomfiture of his troops in a position which he was certain could have been maintained. He ordered General Canalizo to charge up the hill and recapture Cerro Gordo; the latter absolutely refused to obey, but led off his cavalry. Then Santa Anna mounted a mule taken from his carriage, and fled, leaving as trophies to his enemies his travelling equipage and his private papers.

The Mexican army was annihilated and scattered in all directions, they had lost more than a thousand men, killed and wounded, three thousand prisoners, five gen-

erals, all their artillery and military stores. This was not obtained without a severe loss to the invaders, who, in their rash and headlong charges in the face of batteries, and well protected musketeers, had lost four hundred and thirty-one, killed and wounded, of whom thirty-three were officers.

CHAP.  
LIV.  
1847.

Possession was taken of Jalapa, three days later of Perote, a stronghold on the summit of the Cordilleras, which was abandoned almost without a struggle, and then of the city of Puebla—containing eighty thousand inhabitants. At the latter city General Scott established his head-quarters.

April.  
19.

May  
15.

The volunteers' term of enlistments would expire in one month. They refused to re-enlist, but urged that they should be permitted to return to the United States, and there be disbanded, rather than on the soil of Mexico. They greatly dreaded the vomito, or yellow fever, as the season in which it was most severe was near at hand. Though they had no claims to be thus dismissed, General Scott indulged them, as it would be impossible to secure the capital, if the volunteers insisted on returning home at the end of their term of enlistments. Thus situated he was forced to remain inactive three months, till reinforcements arrived from the United States.

Aug  
15

During this interval several circumstances occurred which embarrassed the General-in-Chief's movements as well as disturbed his equanimity. First was the effort made, as he thought, to degrade him from his position in the army. This was to be accomplished by appointing over him a Lieutenant-General, a rank never held in the service except by Washington. The measure failed to pass the Senate. The same end was apparently aimed at in another measure by which power was given the President to appoint officers to any position in the army, without regard to their previous rank.

CHAP.  
LIV.

1847. Instead of money to buy provisions, came an order from the Secretary of War to authorize the collection of duties levied on merchandise entering the Mexican ports. In the same communication was another order to levy contributions upon the Mexican people. This Scott absolutely refused to obey, as General Taylor had also done, giving as a reason the poverty of that part of the country. Says Scott in a letter to the Secretary: "If it is expected at Washington, as is now apprehended, that this army is to support itself by forced contributions upon the country, we may ruin and exasperate the inhabitants and starve ourselves; for it is certain they would sooner remove or destroy the products of their farms, than allow them to fall into our hands without compensation. Not a ration for man or horse would be brought in except by the bayonet, which would oblige the troops to spread themselves out many leagues to the right and left in search of subsistence, and stop all military operations."<sup>1</sup> And he continued to buy provisions for the army at the regular prices of the country, and thus did much to allay a rising feeling of hatred toward the Americans.

The Secretary had given as a reason for this order, that the Mexican people thus laid under contribution, and compelled to bear the expenses of the war, would soon become willing to conclude a treaty of peace. This might apply to the public revenues, and that part of the order the General took measures to have complied with.

Other difficulties arose. After the capture of Vera Cruz General Scott suggested to the President the sending of commissioners to headquarters to treat for peace, should an opportunity occur. For this important duty, the President appointed Mr. N. P. Trist, whose qualifications were that he had been Consul at Havana, could

<sup>1</sup> Gen. Scott's letter to the Sec. of War, as quoted by Ripley, Vol. ii., p. 95.

speak Spanish and professed to understand the Mexican character, his skill as a diplomatist could be inferred only from the fact that he was "Chief Clerk" in the State Department. Having in his possession the draft of a treaty fully drawn out at the department of State, he left Washington and arrived at Vera Cruz. He also bore a despatch from the Secretary of State, Mr. Buchanan, to the Mexican Minister of Foreign Relations. The plan of the treaty and his instructions he was directed to make known confidentially both to General Scott and Commodore Perry. The Secretary of War, Mr. Marcy, wrote to the General-in-Chief, informing him of the mission, but in general terms, and directed him to suspend active military operations till further orders, unless he was attacked.

CHAP.  
LIV.

1847.

May.

Instead of making known to General Scott the designs of his mission as directed, Mr. Trist sent a short note to head-quarters from Vera Cruz, and transmitted the sealed despatch to be forwarded to the Mexican Minister, and the letter from Secretary Marcy; the latter could not be understood without the explanations which Mr. Trist alone could give. The general could only see in this an underhand attempt to degrade him by making him in some way subordinate to the "Chief Clerk." However, in a few days he wrote to Mr. Trist, what he knew of the views of the Mexican people and government in relation to a treaty of peace, to which at present they were opposed. In conclusion, he remarked, that the suspension of hostilities belonged properly to the military commander on the field, and not to a Secretary of War a thousand miles distant.

In reply Trist gave full explanation of his mission, but in disrespectful and arrogant terms, assumed to be the aide-de-camp of the President, and in that capacity to order the General-in-Chief.<sup>1</sup> This correspondence led to

<sup>1</sup> Ripley's War with Mexico, Vol. ii., pp. 100, 147.

CHAP. much harsh feeling and retarded the advancement of the  
 LIV. cause. At length explanations in relation to the com-  
 1842. missioner of peace came to the general from the author-  
 ities at Washington. The Secretary of State severely  
 censured Mr. Trist "for his presuming to command the  
 General-in-Chief."

Santa Anna fled from Cerro Gordo to Orizaba, where he remained some time to organize bands of guerillas to harass the American trains, which would be on their way from Vera Cruz. Afterward he returned to Mexico to find his popularity on the wane. For a time the Mexicans were paralyzed with consternation. Their army on which they had depended so much had been totally routed at Cerro Gordo. The invincible enemy was pressing on; not a barrier intervened between them and the capital. The city was filled with factions; the national councils were divided; ambitious men forgot their patriotism in their desire for self-aggrandizement. The treasury was bankrupt, its only resource forced loans. Yet in the face of all these difficulties, Santa Anna did succeed in raising an army of twenty-five thousand men with sixty pieces of artillery, and in having the city fortified. After all he was the best commander the nation could afford, and the soldiers once more put themselves under his direction, to repel the invaders of their country and their sacred homes. They did not flock to his standard from a prestige of victory, for even when his boasts were still ringing in their ears, he had been ignominiously defeated; nor were they induced by the confidence reposed in the integrity of a great and good man, to whom, as if to a superior being, the multitude turn in times of great peril; but from sheer necessity.

Santa Anna understood the Mexican character. By intrigue and the exercise of a vigorous arm, he seized property, and imprisoned or banished his opponents; by

pretending to be desirous of peace he gained time, and dishonestly entered upon negotiations; offered himself to be bribed, and was accepted. His plans were cunningly devised: if they succeeded, the glory would all redound to his name; if they failed, the censure could be thrown upon others.

CHAP.  
LIV.

1847.

Thus he employed the three months that General Scott was forced to wait for the arrival of reinforcements. Had the volunteers consented to remain in the service six months longer, in all probability the capture of Mexico and a treaty of peace would have ended the campaign, and the blood spared which was shed in such profusion in the subsequent conflicts.

When at Jalapa General Scott issued a proclamation to the people of Mexico. This manifesto, in its tone and spirit, was well adapted to the state of affairs of the country, in showing that the true policy of the Mexican people was to conclude a treaty on the liberal terms offered by the government of the United States. The proclamation was issued at the instance of several Mexican gentlemen of influence, one of whom composed it in original Spanish, as it was dictated by the general. It was well received by the people in the country; but Santa Anna captured a courier, who was bearing copies of it to the capital. He at once discovered by the style that it was not a translation, and he proclaimed with his usual virtuous indignation, that it was the production of some Mexican traitor, and thus neutralized its effects on the people of the city.

April  
20.

At this time, he had by secret agents intimated to Mr. Trist that he was desirous of peace, and plainly that money would be still more acceptable: if a million of dollars were placed at his disposal something might be done. That this proposition might be considered, a reconciliation took place between the general and the com-

June  
25.

CHAP. missioner; as neither could well act without the other.  
LIV.

General Pillow, who had just arrived at Puebla, was also  
1847. admitted to these conferences. He was a particular friend of the President, and, owing to the "informal and confidential request" sent from Washington, this participation was granted. Communications were continued with Santa Anna, but with no more important result than that the latter received ten thousand dollars of the secret service money at the disposal of General Scott.

As might have been anticipated, it was soon seen that Santa Anna's only object was to obtain money and gain time, and General Scott made preparations to advance upon the city as soon as the reinforcements under Brigadier-General Franklin Pierce would arrive from Vera Cruz. Meantime, the way to the city had been thoroughly reconnoitred, and General Worth sent forward with the first division. The whole army consisted of not more than ten thousand men, as great numbers had been left in the hospitals at Perote.

The region through which they marched was a high table land beautiful in the extreme, well watered, interspersed with valleys and mountains, whose slopes were covered with the richest verdure, while in the distance their snow-capped summits glittered in the bright sunshine of August. Almost from the same spot where more than three hundred years before Cortez and his followers viewed the distant temples of the city of Montezuma, the Americans hailed with cheers the city of Mexico.

The passes on the direct route had been well fortified, and were well garrisoned in the confident expectation that their positions could not be turned. The strongest of these was El Penon, to capture which the American engineers stated would require the loss of three thousand lives. General Scott was proverbially careful of the lives of his soldiers; the sacrifice must be avoided. The vicinity of the city was reconnoitred in the most daring manner;

and it was discovered that the defences south and west were not so strongly fortified. CHAP.  
LIV.

The general diverted his course to the left and turned El Penon on the south side, and under the direction of skilful engineers crossed chasms and ravines deemed impassable, and therefore but imperfectly guarded. General Twiggs led the advance, and encamped at Chalco on the lake of the same name. Worth followed, took the lead, and with his division halted at the town of San Augustin, about eight miles from the city. In his front was the strong fortress of San Antonio, now the head-quarters of Santa Anna, who left El Penon, when he found that the Americans were on their march round to the south side of the city. North-west of San Antonio and four miles from the city was the village of Churubusco, rendered strong by a series of intrenchments. Not far to the west of the village of San Augustin was the fortified camp of Contreras, which contained six thousand men; in the rear between the camp and the city were placed twelve thousand men in reserve. The whole number of Mexicans in these various defences was about thirty-five thousand, with nearly one hundred pieces of artillery of various sizes. 1847.  
  
Aug.  
17.

General Persifer F. Smith proposed to attack the camp at Contreras, which was under the command of General Valencia. The night had been one of cold rain and storm and intense darkness, except when enlivened by the fitful glare of the lightning. At three o'clock in the morning, the expedition set out; the soldiers, lest they should become separated on the march, were directed to take hold of each other—at sunrise the conflict commenced. The Mexicans were but partially surprised, still the impetuous attack effectually routed them; three thousand of their number were made prisoners, eighty officers and thirty-five pieces of artillery. Among the latter were two pieces taken at Buena Vista, now recap- Aug.  
19.

CHAP. tured by a portion of the regiment to which they origin-  
LIV. ally belonged. Thus commenced this eventful day—  
1847. severer conflicts were yet to come.

Generals Shields and Pierce had, during the night, thrown their divisions between Santa Anna and Contreras. The fugitives from the latter place had fled to Churubusco, and there fresh troops had also arrived from the city; it seemed from the preparations, that here a desperate defence was to be made.

A convent, a very strong stone building, was well fortified and pierced for muskets and cannon, also the head of the bridge over the river was well defended.

In an hour or two General Scott arrived; as he rode along through the army he was received with hearty cheers. The morning's success had filled the soldiers with enthusiasm, and they hoped on that day to end the war.

Santa Anna himself was busily engaged in arranging his men beyond the Churubusco River—whose banks were lined with the maguey plant, which shielded nearly all his force from view.

The rain of the previous night had flooded the lowlands in the vicinity; the fortifications were masked by trees and fields of corn; the latter flooded, and every part well known to the enemy, whose guns were so arranged as to sweep them perfectly. When the Americans commenced the attack, their officers, in the face of these batteries, would advance and reconnoitre the ground, then the men would march up to that point, the officers would again advance, and the same process be repeated. During this time the cannon balls from the unseen enemy came crashing through the corn, the men and officers fell rapidly, yet as if impelled by some all powerful influence, they moved steadily on until the works of Churubusco were in their hands.

General Scott sent round to the other side a division under General Pillow; they waded through the mud and

water, in some instances waist deep, before they could reach the enemy. Several companies were entirely broken up, Captain Taylor's artillery men were cut up, his horses killed, when suddenly the Mexicans rushed out of the convent to charge; but at this moment a company of American infantry came up and repulsed the assailants.

CHAP.  
LIV.  
1847.

The ground was intersected by causeways, and it was impossible to preserve military order; also owing to their ignorance of the position of the enemy, as well as their own, the Americans were constantly in danger of firing upon their own friends. The battle raged in every direction. General Worth carried San Antonio, and General Twiggs another fortress. The Mexicans fought bravely, they were more than three to one of their foes, and they made every effort to repel them.

For two hours the battle had raged. The smoke completely enshrouded the position of the Mexicans. The roar of their twenty thousand muskets seemed to drown the noise of the artillery, and to render the din of the conflict peculiarly terrific.

The Americans could but feel their way through the corn, and across causeways and ditches, ignorant at what moment they might come upon concealed batteries. At length a party were enabled to cross the river Churubusco, and presented themselves in the rear of the enemy, at the same moment Worth's division emerged from the corn-fields in their front; those in the rear rushed across ditches and over the parapets and carried the works, while the Mexicans at the head of the bridge abandoned it; their guns were immediately seized and turned upon them. Both divisions pressed forward with the bayonet, the Mexicans recoiled in confusion, and finally fled; the dragoons pursuing them to the very gates of the city.

The victory was won, but it had cost the Americans dear; a thousand had fallen or been disabled, among these were seventy-six officers. The coolness, the in-

CHAP. domitable courage and perseverance of both men and  
LIV. officers were never better displayed. The ground was

1847. unknown, and they were thrown upon their own resources; there was no wavering; each one performed his part, and adapted himself to the emergency. In no battle did the Mexicans fight better; they struggled hard, and the number of their slain and wounded and missing—nearly seven thousand—testifies that they were brave.

Santa Anna fled to the city. The night after the battle several persons connected with the British embassy in Mexico appeared at the American head-quarters, and informed General Scott that the Mexican authorities were disposed to conclude a peace, and advised that the capital should not be assaulted, lest the members of the government should be dispersed, and leave no acknowledged authority to enter upon negotiations.

A flag of truce came the next day and presented the request for hostilities to cease preparatory to negotiating a treaty. In accordance with this request, and the representations made the previous evening, Mr. Trist went to the capital and presented his conditions of peace—the same drawn up at Washington. After protracted delays, evidently designed to gain time, the Mexican commissioners announced that they would not accede to these conditions, and in turn they proposed others, which they well knew would not be acceptable.

Sept.  
5.

Mr. Trist returned with this intelligence, and also that contrary to the terms of the armistice, Santa Anna was fortifying the city, and in other respects had violated his pledges.

Indignant at the continued treachery, General Scott now ordered the army to march upon the capital.

On the way were two strong positions: the one Molino del Rey, (the King's Mill,) a foundry, where, it was said, the bells of the churches were being rapidly converted into cannon; near by was the strong castle of Chapultepec,

which could not be turned, but must be taken, before the city could be reached.

It was resolved to capture Molino del Rey; and at three in the morning General Worth sent forward the different corps of his division to commence the attack at dawn of day. While it was yet dark, the two twenty-four pounders opened and sent their balls through the walls of masonry. There was no reply, and it was thought the Mexicans had abandoned the building. Instead, they had changed their position during the night, and now had their guns in readiness to pour grape and round shot upon the flank of the advancing Americans. From the manifest preparations, it is thought, Santa Anna, who was on the ground, knew of the intended attack. His advantages in number and position were great, and when his guns opened, their effect was terrible. In a few minutes the front of the American advance was cut down; of fourteen officers, eleven were either killed or wounded, and a like proportion of the men. The company was forced to fall back, and the Mexicans, as usual, with savage ferocity, rushed out and murdered all the wounded they could find.

Worth ordered forward other companies, and these were seconded by another brigade, who vigorously attacked the Mexican flank. Though exposed to a cross fire which did fearful execution, these all fought desperately; it would seem that the idea of retreating from the face of such overwhelming odds, never occurred to them; they held on and steadily advanced.

Presently General Leon himself headed a strong sortie from the Molino del Rey, but it was driven back; Leon was mortally wounded, and several officers of high rank were slain. The attack was continued in a desultory manner, the assailants sought in various ways to gain access to the enemy; they crept along the sides and fired into the apertures, climbed to the top of the building and tore down the walls with their hands or pried the stones

CHAP.  
LIV.

1847.  
Sept.  
8.

CHAP.  
LIV.  
1847. loose with their bayonets. At length they broke through the southern gate, and rushing in with loud shouts engaged in close combat. The Mexicans did not yield, but continued to fire upon them, from the building into the courtyards. The Americans burst open door after door, reached the roof, and with the bayonet met the enemy hand to hand. In a few minutes the north-west gate was in like manner forced. A portion of the Mexicans held out a white flag in token of surrender, while others made their way to Chapultepec.

This has been deemed the hardest contested conflict of the entire war. The enemy were in numbers three to one, and in a strong position. After the commencement of the attack, the Americans had scarcely any aid from their heavy cannon, but were forced to depend upon their rifles and muskets. Still they carried the place, and captured eight hundred prisoners, and lost themselves seven hundred and eighty-seven killed and wounded, of whom fifty-nine were officers—nearly one-fourth of the whole number engaged in the battle. The loss of so many brave men shed a gloom over the entire army.

The Castle of Chapultepec stood on a high and precipitous hill, very steep and rocky, on the south side toward the Americans; on the west the slope was more gradual, but covered with dense woods and rough with rocks. Here, shielded by these, was a large force of Mexicans.

Sept.  
13. At the earliest dawn the full force of the American cannon was concentrated upon the walls of the castle, and at the west side, storming parties were waiting anxiously for a breach to be made, by which they might carry it by assault. They groped their way from tree to tree and rock to rock, driving the Mexicans before them, when suddenly, on the crest of the hill, the whole force came out on the open space in the presence of ramparts frowning with cannon and musketry. They ap-

proached cautiously, returning only a few shots, but still drawing nearer and nearer. Presently an ensign bearing the standard of his regiment, rushed forward to the rampart, a shout arose, and a few followed with ladders, placed them against the wall and with a cheer bounded over. The Mexicans, taken by surprise, stood but a few minutes, then scrambled over the side and down the precipitous rocks out of danger. This was the only instance during the war where the Americans so far forgot themselves as not to cease their fire at the submission of the foe, and even now it continued only for a few minutes. Their provocations had been great. Only a few days before, as on every other occasion, they had seen their wounded companions, found on the field of battle, barbarously murdered by the Mexicans. The exulting shouts, the disregard of discipline, which continued for an hour, only manifested the deep emotions which prevailed.

The castle was a mass of ruins; so effective had been the shots and shells, that it was battered to pieces. Here had been the national military school, and here the young students had bravely stood their ground. All of their number, who were not slain, were taken prisoners, with the aged General Bravo their commander.

While the conflict was in progress General Quitman was engaged in capturing the defences thrown over the causeways which led through a marsh—a lake in the days of Cortez—to the city. They were taken in succession; each one gave more or less resistance. At nightfall the Mexicans were driven within the city, and the Americans held two of its gates.

At midnight commissioners came with propositions of peace, and to surrender the city; they stated that Santa Anna was marching out with his army. General Scott refused to listen again to terms of accommodation; when his kindness of feeling had prompted him to offer them peace, he had been grossly deceived. The following morn-

CHAP.  
LIV.  
1847.

CHAP. ing, with six thousand men, he marched into the city,  
 LIV. drew up his army upon the great plaza, and hoisted the  
 1847. stars and stripes over the National Palace.

Sept. For several days the troops were occasionally fired  
 14. upon from windows and the tops of houses; the work, it  
 was said, of convicts, two thousand of whom had just  
 been liberated; but stringent measures were taken to  
 insure safety.

Santa Anna, with three or four thousand troops, had  
 gone toward Puebla. He devolved his authority upon  
 Peña y Peña, the President of the Supreme Court of Jus-  
 tice. The other prominent Mexicans went in different  
 directions.

Colonel Childs had been left in command at Puebla  
 with a small garrison, only five hundred men, to protect  
 eighteen hundred sick and disabled American soldiers.  
 The Mexicans, encouraged by false reports of success at  
 the capital, made frequent desultory attacks upon the  
 garrison, but by great exertions Colonel Childs held them  
 Sept. at bay for nine days, when Santa Anna, with a remnant  
 22. —some four or five thousand—of his discomfited army,  
 appeared, and in a pompous manner summoned Childs to  
 surrender. The summons was disregarded. The Mexi-  
 can chief blockaded the town for seven days and then  
 marched to intercept a train, on its way from Vera Cruz.  
 General Lane was in command of this convoy—troops  
 from Taylor's army, composed of Indiana and Ohio vol-  
 unteers.

Santa Anna took position at Huamantla, a town some  
 miles north of the main pass El Pinal, intending to attack  
 the Americans when they should become entangled in the  
 defile. But Lane was not thus to be entrapped. He at  
 once set out, surprised Santa Anna himself, and compelled  
 him, after some loss, to abandon the town. The train  
 Oct. unmolested moved on the following day to Puebla, and  
 3. the garrison, after a month's siege, was relieved.

Within ten days it was ascertained that Santa Anna was concentrating another force at Alixo. Lane, by a forced march, suddenly fell upon them, and dispersed them beyond recovery. Almost immediately after his failure to prevent the capture of the city of Mexico, Santa Anna resigned the presidency of the republic, but still retained his office as commander-in-chief of the Mexican armies. Now he was mortified to receive a note from Senor Rosa, the Minister of War, informing him that his services were no longer required by the government, which had just been inaugurated. He took the hint, and was soon on his way to the Gulf Coast, thence to the West Indies to be ere long again engaged in intrigues to disturb his unfortunate country.

CHAP.  
LIV.  
1847.

In a few weeks after the capture of the city of Mexico, the seat of government was removed to Queretaro. Soon after members for a new Congress were elected, and that body commenced its session. At the town of Guadalupe Hidalgo, commissioners and Mr. Trist were negotiating a treaty of peace. It was concluded on the 2d of February, and now it only remained to be ratified by the authorities at Washington to formally close the war, which, from the battle of Palo Alto to the capture of the city of Mexico, had lasted one year and five months.

1848.  
May  
9,  
1846.

In this brief period, armies, of their own free will, had flocked to the standard of their country; had been organized, had marched into a foreign land, dissimilar to their own in climate and in feature, some across deserts and through districts infected with direful disease, others in mid-winter passed over untrodden mountains, covered with snow, and then in turn over arid plains, and met the enemy in conflict many hundreds of miles from their homes, while fleets were fitted out, which swept round Cape Horn, and were in time to perform their part. The rapidity with which cannon were manufactured and mu-

Sept.  
14,  
1847.

CHAP. LIV. nitions of war prepared and transported to the scene of  
action, was astonishing.

1847.

During the time of the occupation of the city of Mexico, difficulties arose between some of the officers of the army. From misunderstandings hasty charges were made, and recriminations followed. Two of the officers, Pillow and Worth, made charges against the General-in-Chief, and he ordered them under arrest for insubordination. They appealed to the War Department, and made representations, in consequence of which the venerable commander, who had been a worthy leader from Lundy's Lane to Mexico, was superseded by an order from Washington, and the temporary command given to another. Subsequently the charges were virtually withdrawn, and they resumed their respective ranks. It is not expedient to go into detail; let the matter sink into oblivion. But never before—and may it never be again—in the history of the country, when its interests were so deeply involved, did the terms of "party," democrat or whig, of "friends" or "opponents" of the "administration," have so much influence.

Certainly, in truth it has been said, that those who served their country well in this war fared badly. Taylor, who was victorious from Palo Alto to Buena Vista, was quarrelled with; Scott, who marched triumphant from Vera Cruz to Mexico, was superseded; Fremont, who secured California, was court-martialled, and Trist, who made the treaty, which secured the objects of the war, was recalled and dismissed.

The war had been an unceasing source of disappointment to those whose measures brought it on. Santa Anna, who was to have been a harbinger of peace, had to be beaten from point to point, and not until he was finally driven from power did those of his countrymen, who were in favor of an amicable arrangement, dare to act.

When the commissioners, appointed by the President to supersede Trist, arrived at Mexico, they found the treaty negotiated and signed by the parties. In substance it was the same that had been prepared by the Cabinet. When brought to Washington it was at once laid before the Senate, and after a short discussion ratified. The President by proclamation, on the 4th of July, 1848, made known to the nation that the war was at an end, and a satisfactory treaty had been concluded.

CHAP.  
LIV.  
1848.

New Mexico and Upper California were ceded to the United States, and the lower Rio Grande, from its mouth to El Paso, was taken as the boundary of Texas. Mexico was to receive fifteen millions of dollars; the claims of American citizens against her—amounting to three and a quarter millions of dollars—were assumed by the United States. In a few months not an American soldier was on Mexican soil.

On the 4th of July, 1845, the annexation of Texas was consummated; and thus within three years a territory four times as large as France, had been added to the United States—regions hitherto imperfectly known, but having in store the elements of great wealth.

At the very time that the commissioners were negotiating the treaty, a laborer engaged at work upon a mill-race belonging to Captain Sutter, on one of the tributaries of the Sacramento river, noticed in the sand some shining particles. They proved to be gold. By the time the treaty was ratified rumors of the discovery reached the United States. The excitement produced was unprecedented. In a short time thousands were on their way to the land of gold. Every means of conveyance was called into requisition, from the emigrant's pack-horse and wagon, to the sailing-vessel and the steam-ship. Some went in caravans over the plains and the Rocky Mountains; some crossed the Isthmus of Panama, and found their way up the Pacific coast; others took ship and passed

CHAP. round Cape Horn. The sufferings of the great majority  
 LIV. of these adventurers were intense; hundreds of them met  
 1848. untimely deaths on the way, or by disease, privations, and  
 improvidence, when they reached their journey's end. The ferment extended throughout the civilized world. Multitudes of gold-seekers were soon on their way from the different countries of Europe and South America, and even distant China sent her thousands. The tide of immigration was directed to SAN FRANCISCO, which, from a miserable village of a few huts, soon became a city of fifteen thousand inhabitants, now to have about sixteen times that number, and to be the great entrepôt of the Pacific.

The influence of this discovery of gold mines, has been incalculable in its effects, not merely upon the United States, but has extended to other nations. "It touched the nerves of industry throughout the world," infused new life into commerce, and awakened a spirit of adventure and individual exertion never before known.

Feb. On the 21st of February, the venerable John Quincy  
 21. Adams, when in his seat in the House of Representatives, was struck by paralysis. Two days later he expired. His last words were, "This is the last of earth:—I am content." Born in revolutionary times: "The cradle hymns of the child were the songs of liberty." He had associated with the fathers of the republic, and was the representative of the memories of that heroic age. For more than sixty years he had been constantly engaged in public affairs. At the age of fourteen, private secretary to Francis Dana, American minister to Russia; at twenty-seven appointed minister to Holland by Washington, who styled him "the ablest of all our diplomatic corps." Afterward successively, United States Senator; professor in Harvard College; minister to Russia; one of the negotiators of the treaty of Ghent; Secretary of State under Monroe; President, and then member of the House

till his death, at the age of fourscore. Old in years but CHAP. LIV.  
 buoyant in spirit, he never lagged behind his age; but 1848.  
 with careful eye watched the progress of his country, and  
 sympathized with its youthful energies.

The administration of Mr. Polk was drawing to a close. Its great event had been the Mexican war, the train for which was laid under his predecessor. The tariff of 1842, under which the industry of the country had rapidly recovered from its prostration, after an ex- 1846.  
 istence of four years was so modified, as to afford less protection to American manufactures.

David Wilmot, a member of the House from Pennsylvania, introduced a proposition into Congress, since known as the "Wilmot Proviso," by which slavery should be prohibited in all territory obtained by treaty. The "Proviso" did not become a law, but the subject of slavery was once more brought up for discussion. May 1.

The Democratic convention met at Baltimore to nominate a candidate for the office of President. Two sets of delegates appeared from New York, both claiming to be the true representatives of the Democracy of that State.

No compromise could reconcile the parties, and the convention solved the difficulty by excluding both from its deliberations. It then proceeded to nominate Senator Lewis Cass, of Michigan, for President, and General William O. Butler, of Kentucky, for Vice-President.

The delegates representing the Whig party, and those opposed to the measures of the administration, met at Philadelphia, and nominated General Zachary Taylor for President, and Millard Fillmore, of New York, for Vice-President. June 1.

One portion of the Democracy of New York accepted the nominations of the Baltimore convention; another portion rejected them. The latter called a convention, at Buffalo of those who were opposed to the extension of

CHAP. slavery into free territory. They adopted a platform in  
LIV. favor of "Free Soil," and nominated ex-president Van  
1848. Buren for the Presidency and Charles Francis Adams  
Aug. (son of John Quincy Adams) for the Vice-Presidency.

A spirited canvass followed, and the candidates of the Whig party were elected.

During the last year of this administration, Wisconsin was admitted into the Union as a State, and Minnesota organized as a Territory.

A new Department, that of the Interior, was created by Congress, to relieve the Secretary of the Treasury of part of his duties.

On the fifth of March, the fourth occurring on the Sabbath, the new President was inducted into office.

Mr. Polk, broken down in health, retired to his home in Nashville, Tennessee, where in a few months he was  
June. numbered with the dead. A man of exemplary character; he was lamented by the people.

## CHAPTER LV.

### TAYLOR AND FILLMORE'S ADMINISTRATION.

Discussion on Slavery.—Wilmot Proviso.—The Powers of the Constitution; their Application in the Territories.—Thirty-first Congress.—President's Message; its Recommendations.—Debate on the Omnibus Bill.—Death of Calhoun.—Death of President Taylor.—Fillmore Inaugurated.—The Fugitive Slave Law.—The Mormons; their Origin; Troubles; Settlement in Utah.—A Disunion Convention.—Lopez invades Cuba.—The Search for Sir John Franklin.—Dr. E. K. Kane.—Death of Henry Clay; of Daniel Webster.—The Tripartite Treaty.—Presidential Election.

GENERAL Zachary Taylor was a native of Virginia; but when he was very young, his father removed to Kentucky, and on the frontiers of that State he spent his youth as a farmer. At the age of twenty-four he received a commission in the army from President Jefferson, and entered upon a career more congenial to his tastes than cultivating the soil. For forty years he was in the military service of his country; his sphere of duty was on the frontiers; and thus situated he had never even voted at an election. Honest and frank, blest with common sense and firmness of purpose, he was withal unselfish and patriotic, and uncontaminated with political intrigues. His inaugural address on taking the office of President, was brief, and confined to a declaration of general principles. His cabinet, at the head of which was John M. Clayton of Delaware, was at once confirmed by the Senate.

CHAP.  
LV.

1849.

1808.

CHAP.  
LV.

1820. The question of slavery had appeared under different phases. For twelve years after the passage of the Missouri Compromise, the subject had not been agitated in Congress, but now attention was drawn to it by the presentation of memorials, praying that body to abolish the slave-trade and slavery in the District of Columbia. Meantime others, who looked upon the system as an evil to be remedied at all hazards, sent through the mail to the South publications, addressed to the slave-owners themselves, and designed to influence them in favor of emancipation; but there were others who sent papers that contained engravings by no means calculated to make the slave contented with his lot. The fear was great lest the latter might become the occasion of insurrections and blood-shed. President Jackson recommended to Congress to pass a law prohibiting the use of the mail for the circulation of "incendiary publications." But the bill to that effect did not become a law. The excitement was great, both North and South: in the former sometimes developing itself in violent measures against the abolitionists; in the latter, some broke into the post-offices and destroyed the obnoxious papers, and others raised the cry of disunion, while, so embittered had the feeling become in Congress, that for a time memorials on the subject would not be received.
- 1835.
- 1836.

1846. Now the slavery agitation was a legacy left by the previous administration—a question which overshadowed all others, and almost exclusively engaged the attention of Congress and the nation. Three years before the Wilmot Proviso had initiated the discussion, which was fast acquiring a tone of bitterness hitherto unknown. The contents of the newspapers showed that the question had penetrated into every nook and corner of the land—in social circles and in the retirement of the fireside—all were alive to the importance of the subject at issue; the

emotions of a nation swayed in the storm of clashing opinions.

CHAP.  
LV.

---

1849.

The annexation of Texas and the consequent war with Mexico, came to be looked upon as designed to further the interests of slavery, and to commit the nation to the policy of extending that system. Those opposed to such measures endeavored to counteract them by means of the Proviso, but that had failed to receive the sanction of Congress. With the exception of Texas proper, it was uncertain whether the newly-acquired territories would admit slavery; the indications were that they would reject it. And this feature of the controversy gave rise to another question; how to introduce the system into free territory. Would Congress subvert the law of Mexico, which had long since prohibited human bondage within her limits? That body never at any time had interfered with slavery as existing in the States, neither had it directly legislated it into free territory: the policy had rather been not to interfere with the inhabitants in deciding the question for themselves.

The last Congress, absorbed in the turmoil of the discussion, had dissolved without providing governments for the territories. To remedy this evil, President Taylor instructed the Federal officers in these territories to encourage the people to organize temporary government for themselves.

President Polk in his last message had recommended that the Missouri Compromise line of thirty-six degrees thirty minutes north latitude, be extended to the Pacific, and thus leave the territory south of that line liable to be made slaveholding. Motions to that effect failed in Congress. That line had been adopted for the Louisiana territory alone, which was slave, and it made one side free, but if it was produced to the Pacific it would pass through free territory, and therefore make one side slave.

CHAP.  
LV

1849.

The advocates of the system contended that they had a right to go into any of the territories and take with them their property, meaning slaves. That was admitted, but only under the laws of Congress, which so far protected such property, but it was denied that the slaveholder could carry with him the municipal law of the States from which he emigrated, any more than the emigrant from a free State could take with him its peculiar laws.

The same object was sought by attempting to "extend the constitution of the United States to the territories," and this under the form of an amendment attached to the general appropriation bill, providing a temporary government for the ceded territories, and extending to them certain acts of Congress. The proposition elicited a discussion in which Calhoun and Webster each took part. The former argued that the Constitution recognized slavery; that it was the supreme law of the land; therefore it was superior to every law in opposition to slavery, not only overriding any territorial law to that effect, but even superior to any law of Congress designed to abolish it; and that the property of the South, meaning Slaves, would thus be protected by the Constitution in the territories into which Calhoun openly avowed his intention to thus carry the institution of slavery. "The Constitution," said he, "pronounces itself to be the supreme law of the land;" the States as well as the Territories.

Mr. Webster replied that the Constitution was made for the States and not for the Territories; that Congress governed the latter independently of the Constitution, and often contrary to it, and was constantly doing things in the Territories that it could not do in the States; and that the Constitution could not operate of itself in the Territories. "When new territory has been acquired," said he, "it has always been subject to the laws of Con-

gress, to such laws as Congress thought proper to pass for its immediate government and preparatory state in which it was to remain until it was ready to come into the Union as one of the family of States." He quoted the Constitution itself, which declares that "it and the laws of Congress passed under it shall be the supreme law of the land." Thus it required a definite law of Congress to establish slavery in the Territories under the Constitution, as shown by the words of that instrument itself.

CHAP.  
LV.

1849.

The amendment failed in both houses; it became but the germ of another doctrine, that the Constitution of the United States, independently of an act of Congress, but in spite of it, not only goes of itself to the territories but carries with it a shield protecting slavery.

During this session of Congress meetings were held at Washington, attended by a majority of the members of Congress from the slave-holding States, to take into consideration the measures best adapted to secure southern rights.

They published an Address to the people of the South. It was drawn up by Calhoun, and by no means was it conciliatory in its tone and sentiments, and for that reason it failed to enlist in its favor all the delegates from the South. In truth it became a party measure. Only forty members, all from the slaveholding States, signed their names to the Address: of these, thirty-eight belonged to the Democratic party.

This manifesto was soon followed by a Southern Convention to dissolve the Union. The Legislatures of two of the States, South Carolina and Mississippi, issued a call for a "Southern Congress," to frame a government for a "United States South."

The agitation was not limited to the South; the North was as busily engaged in canvassing the exciting question, and both parties were summoning their energies for the conflict in the new Congress about to meet.

CHAP.  
LV.1849.  
Nov.  
3.

The thirty-first Congress, called a month earlier than the usual time, met in its first session. Parties were nearly equally divided. The House spent three weeks, and balloted sixty times for a speaker, and only succeeded by changing the rule by which a majority of the whole is required to elect, to that of a plurality. Mr. C. Howell Cobb, of Georgia, was elected; his competitor was Mr. Robert C. Winthrop, of Massachusetts.

The first and only annual message of President Taylor was sent in. He saw the difficulties which lay in his path. The bitterness of party had been increased by sectional feelings. The President felt the responsibility of his position; but he fearlessly yet temperately gave his views, and plainly intimated that he should not shrink from his duty to the Union itself; deprecated sectional controversies, and referred to Washington in confirmation of this sentiment.

The points at issue were various, and he recommended a plan to settle each. As California, whose population had increased so rapidly, had framed a Constitution, he advised that she should be at once admitted into the Union; that New Mexico and Utah should be organized as territories, and when they were prepared to come into the Union as States, be permitted to decide the question of slavery for themselves; and that the dispute between Texas and New Mexico, in relation to their boundaries, should be settled by the judicial authority of the United States.

Early in the session Henry Clay moved in the Senate a series of resolutions designed to settle these disputes by a compromise. A committee of thirteen was appointed, to whom these resolutions and the various plans which had been proposed were referred. In due time Mr. Clay, as chairman, reported. The spirit of the resolutions was combined in one measure, which, from its character and the dissimilar objects it was designed to accomplish, was

styled the Omnibus Bill. It proposed the admission of California; the organization, without mention of slavery, of the territories of New Mexico and Utah; the arrangement of the Texas boundary, by paying the latter ten millions of dollars; the abolition of the slave trade in the District of Columbia, and the enactment of a more stringent fugitive slave law.

CHAP.  
LV.

1849.

Senator Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, insisted that the bill was not equal in its provisions, because the South gained nothing by the measure; and he urged that the Missouri line of compromise should be extended to the Pacific, "with the specific recognition of the right to hold slaves in the Territory below that line."

1850.

To this Clay replied, that "no earthly power could induce him to vote for a specific measure for the introduction of slavery where it had not existed, either north or south of that line." "I am unwilling," continued he, "that the posterity of the present inhabitants of California and of New Mexico should reproach us for doing just what we reproach Great Britain for doing to us." "If the citizens of those Territories come here with Constitutions establishing slavery, I am for admitting them into the Union; but then it will be their own work and not ours, and their posterity will have to reproach them and not us."

Calhoun, now near to death, in a speech read by a friend, urged that if the Union would be preserved, it must be by an equal number of slave and free States, to maintain the number of senators equal in the Senate.

"The incurability of the evil," said Senator Benton, of Missouri, "is the greatest objection." "It is a question of races, involving consequences which go to the destruction of one or the other; this was seen fifty years ago, and the wisdom of Virginia balked at it then. It seems to be above human reason. But there is a wisdom

CHAP.  
LV.

---

above human! and to that we must look. In the meantime do not extend the evil."

1849.

Soon after this occurred the death of John C. Calhoun. He first entered Congress in 1811, and during almost forty years had filled various offices in the service of his country. A man of primitive taste and simple manners, uniting the kindest of feelings with unflinching integrity and devotion to duty. The latter portion of his public career was marked by the most strenuous advocacy of States' rights and Southern institutions.

Mar.  
31.

July  
9.

A few months later President Taylor was also numbered with the dead. He suddenly became ill with a violent fever, which terminated his life in a few days, after he had held office sixteen months. He had shown himself equal to the emergency; and his death was a public calamity indeed. Though elected by one party, his policy and acts were approved by all, and the whole nation mourned his loss.

#### MILLARD FILLMORE.

The Vice-President, on the 10th of July, took the oath, and was inaugurated as President. It was done without show or parade; merely a joint committee of three from each House of Congress, and the members of the cabinet, attended him. The oath was administered by the venerable William Cranch, Chief Justice of the Circuit Court of the District of Columbia, who, appointed by John Adams, had held the office for fifty years. Not an unnecessary word was spoken; the ceremony was one of deep solemnity.

The first official act of Mr. Fillmore was to call upon Congress to take suitable measures for the funeral of the late President, "who had been so recently raised by the unsolicited voice of the people to the highest civil author-

ity in the government." An impressive funeral service was performed, and eulogies pronounced upon him by many of the leading statesmen of the country. The Cabinet resigned, and the President nominated another, at the head of which was Daniel Webster as Secretary of State.

CHAP.  
LV.

1850.

Four months had nearly elapsed since Henry Clay reported his Compromise Bill. Its provisions had been thoroughly discussed by the members of both Houses. It was then taken up article by article and passed—the last the Fugitive Slave law. The similar law which had been enacted in 1787, as part of the ordinance prohibiting slavery in the Territory north-west of the Ohio, and also a law to the same effect passed during Washington's administration, were thought to be defective, and a new one was framed.

Sept.  
18.

1793

The Supreme Court of the United States held the opinion that justices of the peace in the respective States, were not called upon to enforce the law for the rendition of slaves. Since the agitation of the slavery question in Congress, a dislike to enforcing that law had greatly increased in the free States. The feeling reached the Legislatures and some of them, by law, prohibited the use of their jails for the confinement of fugitive slaves, and the justices of the peace refused to act on the subject. To obviate the latter difficulty the present bill provided for the appointment of United States' commissioners, before whom such cases could be tried.

When the vote on the reception of California was taken, and she admitted to the Union, her senators, Wm. M. Gwin and John C. Fremont, who had been in waiting, immediately took their seats.

The vast region known as Utah, was in the possession of the Indians and the Mormons or Latter Day Saints, a religious sect. It was founded by Joseph Smith, a native of Vermont, but at that time a resident of Central New 1827

CHAP.  
LV.

1850. York; illiterate and superstitious, cunning and unprincipled; when a youth he loved to dupe his companions; at the age of fifteen he pretended that he had seen visions; and at twenty-two that he had received a direct revelation from heaven; that he had been directed to a certain hill, where he would find golden plates, covered with Egyptian characters, which he alone, as a prophet, was empowered to decipher. This was the famous "Book of Mormon." It professed to give a new system of religion, and to chronicle events which occurred on this continent long anterior to the Christian era.

It is said a man named Spaulding, when laboring under ill health wrote the story to alleviate his hours of ennui; after his death the manuscript fell into the hands of Smith, who unscrupulously used it to deceive his fellow-men.

1833. His system of polygamy led to gross immoralities; and the vicious, as well as the ignorant, some of whom may have been honest, became his disciples. In five years he had twelve hundred followers. At this time the whole sect removed to Jackson county, Missouri. As they professed to be the true saints, by virtue of which they were to become the inheritors of the western country, they became objects of distrust to the Missourians. The militia were called out, but the Mormons avoided a conflict by crossing the river to Illinois.

1840. They prepared to make that State their home. On a bluff, overlooking the Mississippi, they founded a city, Nauvoo, and erected an imposing temple. Thefts and robberies were numerous in the vicinity, and these crimes were attributed to the Mormons, some of whom were arrested. The saints, it was said, controlled the courts, for the prisoners were speedily liberated. An intense excitement was produced in the country by these proceedings. At length the Prophet himself, and a brother, were arrested and thrown into prison in the town of Carthage.

A mob collected a few days after, and in the melée the brothers were slain. The spirit aroused against them was so violent that the Mormons could find safety alone in flight, and the following year they sold their possessions, left their beautiful city, which contained ten thousand inhabitants, and under chosen elders emigrated away across the plains and over the Rocky Mountains, and finally found a resting place in the Great Basin. As they were now upon the soil of Mexico, they hoped their troubles were at an end. They significantly called their new home, Deseret—the land of the Honey Bee. To recruit their numbers they sent missionaries to every quarter of the globe; that these zealous apostles have met with astonishing success in obtaining proselytes, is a sad reflection.

CHAP.  
LV.  
1844.

Meantime they labored with great zeal in founding a city on the shores of the Great Salt Lake. It is on ground four thousand three hundred feet above the level of the ocean, and planned on a large scale; its streets eight rods wide, and every house surrounded by a garden.

Presently came the war with Mexico, and the ceding of all that region to the United States. The Mormons were the first to organize themselves as a territory under the name of Deseret, but Congress saw proper to change the name to Utah. President Fillmore appointed Brigham Young, one of their elders, the first governor.

1850.

After the passage of the Compromise Bill, the agitation by no means ceased in the south. The design of seceding from the Union was openly avowed. A Disunion Convention met at Nashville, Tennessee. It invited the assembling of a "Southern Congress," but the legislatures of only two States responded to the call—South Carolina and Mississippi. The former elected their quota of representatives to the Congress. The great mass of the people were moved but little by these appeals, and the country

CHAP.  
LV.

---

breathed more freely in the confident belief that the vexed question was really at rest.

1850.

In no previous discussion of the subject did the great majority of the people of the Union manifest so much interest, not because it had become more important, but a great change had been wrought, since, thirty years before, the country was agitated by the discussions, which led to the enactment of the Missouri Compromise. The number of newspapers had increased at an unprecedented rate, and with them the facilities for publishing general intelligence and reporting the debates in Congress, and now was added the telegraph, which seemed almost to bring the ears of the nation to the Halls of Legislation. Yet in still greater proportion had the numbers of intelligent readers increased, millions of whom became familiar with the question and the principles involved, and watched with increasing interest every new phase the subject assumed. This may account for the earnestness which characterized this conflict of opinions; the mass of the people read and judged for themselves. The philanthropist may not dread the response of their hearts;—they may be slow to act, but they are untrammelled by pledges and uninfluenced by political aspirations.

About the commencement of Taylor's administration, General Lopez, a Spaniard, endeavored to create a revolution in Cuba. He represented that the people of that island were anxious and prepared to throw off the yoke of the mother country; and by this means he persuaded large numbers of adventurous spirits in the United States to engage in the enterprise. The pretext was to aid the Cubans; but the real object was to secure the annexation of the island to the United States. President Taylor promptly issued a proclamation forbidding citizens of the Union to engage in the expedition. The warning was unheeded, and a company of six hundred men, under the

lead of Lopez, eluded the United States' authorities, and landed at Cardenas. But not meeting with sympathy from the people whom they professed to have come to liberate, they re-embarked, and sailed for Key West, Florida, barely escaping capture on the way by a Spanish steam-vessel of war.

CHAP.  
LV.

1850.  
May  
19.

The following year the attempt was renewed. A party of four hundred and eighty men landed on the island, but were almost immediately overpowered and captured. Lopez and a number of his deluded followers were put to death by the Spanish authorities at Havana.

In 1845, Sir John Franklin sailed from England in quest of the long sought for north-west passage. No tidings had ever been received from him, and the several efforts to send him aid had been unsuccessful. The sympathies of the humane were enlisted in behalf of the daring navigator. Mr. Henry Grinnell, a noble-hearted New York merchant, fitted out, at his own expense, an expedition which, under the command of Lieutenant De Haven, of the United States' navy, sailed for the Arctic regions in May, 1850. With De Haven went Dr. E. K. Kane, in the capacity of surgeon and naturalist. The search was unsuccessful, and the vessels returned.

The United States' Government now sent another expedition on the same errand of mercy in connection with Mr. Grinnell. The control of this was given to Dr Kane, whose scientific attainments were of a high order, and whose prudence and indomitable energy excited high hopes of the success of the enterprise. The search was fruitless; the results of the discoveries made have been embodied and given to the world. Sir John has no doubt long since perished, while his unknown friend, Dr. Kane, broken down in health because of his labors and privations, has also closed his life.

1851.

Two of our greatest statesmen, with whose names for a third or a century are associated some of the most

CHAP. important measures of the government, passed away.  
 LV. Henry Clay and Daniel Webster: The one at Washing-  
 1852. ton, the other at his home at Marshfield.

June No two men were more endeared to the American  
 28. people. Henry Clay, by his generous frankness and  
 Oct. nobleness of character, won their love. Daniel Webster  
 24. in his mighty intellect towered above his peers, and com-  
 manded their respect; of him they were proud.

Spain became alarmed at the attempts of lawless ad-  
 venturers striving to wrest Cuba from her hands. France  
 and England sympathized with her, and proposed to the  
 United States to join with them in a "tripartite treaty,"  
 in which each should disclaim any intention of seizing  
 upon that island, but, on the contrary, should guarantee  
 its possession to Spain. A correspondence to this effect  
 had already commenced, and to the proposal Edward  
 Everett, who since the death of Webster was Secretary of  
 State, replied in the negative. "The President," said he,  
 "does not covet the acquisition of Cuba for the United  
 States." Yet he "could not see with indifference that  
 island fall into the possession of any other European Gov-  
 ernment than Spain." It was shown that this was a  
 question peculiarly American, from the situation of the  
 island itself; its proximity to our shores; its commanding  
 the approach to the Gulf of Mexico, and to the entrance  
 to the Mississippi, which with its tributaries forms the  
 largest system of internal water-communication in the  
 world, and also its ability to interfere with the passage to  
 California by the Isthmus route. It was another state-  
 ment of the celebrated Monroe doctrine, that the United  
 States did not recognize European interference in ques-  
 tions purely American.

For President the Whigs nominated General Scott,  
 and the Democrats, Franklin Pierce, of New Hampshire.

The latter was elected, in connection with William R. King, of Alabama, as Vice-President. Mr. King had been United States' Senator from that State—with the exception of four years, when he was American minister at the court of France—since 1819; compelled by declining health he went to Cuba, where he took the oath of office. Then he returned home, not to enter upon the duties of the Vice-Presidency, but to die.

CHAP.  
LV.  
1852.

To avoid the inconvenience of too great a number of members in the House of Representatives, as well as to prevent the waste of time in arranging the ratio of its members to the population, it was enacted that after the third of March, 1853, "The House of Representatives will consist of two hundred and thirty-three members, Provided, that after the apportionment of the Representatives, under the next or any subsequent census, a new State or States shall be admitted into the Union, the Representatives assigned to such new State shall be in addition to the number of Representatives herein limited, which excess over two hundred and thirty-three shall continue until the next succeeding census."

1850.  
May  
23.

Thereafter, when each "subsequent census" is officially known, the House determines by law the number of its own members "until the next succeeding census," and in proportion to that the number of its Representatives is assigned to each State. The Senate, in accordance with *Article I., Section 3*, of the Constitution, is divided into three classes, and when Senators are elected from a new State, first in order is the distribution of the times they are to serve into *long and short* terms. This is determined by lot, and ever after on the rolls of the Senate that distinction is preserved. A member of the House of Representatives serves two years, a President four, and a Senator six. This overlapping of terms is designed to secure deliberate legislation. The Representatives under the Census of 1910 number 391.

## CHAPTER LVI.

### PIERCE'S ADMINISTRATION.

Purchase of the Mesilla Valley.—Treaty with Japan.—The Kansas-Nebraska Bill.—The effects of the Measure.—Emigrants to Kansas.—Struggles and Conflicts.—James Buchanan, President.—The Contest continues in Kansas.—National Progress.

CHAP.  
LVI.

1853. THE new President inaugurated on the 4th of March, was a native of New Hampshire, a graduate of Bowdoin College, and by profession a lawyer. He had served in the legislature of his native State, two terms in the House of Representatives at Washington and nearly a term in the Senate of the United States. William L. Marcy, of New York, was appointed Secretary of State.

Jan.  
8.

Owing to the incorrectness of the maps used when the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo was made, a dispute arose as to the proper boundaries between New Mexico and the Mexican province of Chihuahua. Both parties claimed the Mesilla Valley, said to be fertile, but more important for affording facilities for a road to California. Santa Anna, who was again President of the republic of Mexico, and intent, as usual, on driving a bargain, took possession of the territory in dispute. The United States obtained the valley, and the free navigation of the Gulf of California and of the river Colorado, to the American boundary by paying the Mexican government ten millions of dollars.

The acquisition of California made the importance of commercial treaties with the nations of eastern Asia more and more apparent. During Fillmore's term, Commodore Perry, brother of the hero of Lake Erie, was sent with a squadron to open communication with the empire of Japan. The inhabitants of those islands from time immemorial had excluded foreigners. The authorities were greatly astonished at the boldness of the Commodore, when he appeared with his steamers—the first that ever floated on those waters—in the Bay of Jeddo. He was ordered to depart; but he declined and insisted on seeing the proper authorities, and making known to them the object of his friendly visit. At length a Japanese officer appeared, who promised to lay the matter before the emperor. The 14th of July was the day named to receive the letter from the President.

CHAP.  
LVI.

1853.

The Commodore, escorted by a company of marines, landed. He was received with the pomp of an oriental pageant, and an answer to the letter promised the following spring. The answer was received and a treaty concluded. The merchants of the United States obtained permission to trade in two specified ports—Simodi and Hakodadi—and also for the residence of American citizens and consuls at the ports, as well as to visit without molestation in the interior, ten or twelve miles.

April.

The measure that will render the administration of Pierce famous, was the bill to organize the territories of Nebraska and Kansas. This was an immense region—extending from the confines of Missouri, Iowa and Minnesota to the crest of the Rocky Mountains, and from thirty-six degrees thirty minutes north latitude, to the British possessions. This vast territory was a part of the Louisiana Purchase, from which, by the Missouri Compromise, the system of slavery had been excluded.

In part this region had been assigned to the various

CHAP.  
LVI.

---

1853. tribes of Indians, who years before, to make way for settlers, had removed from their lands north-west of the Ohio. The white settlers who had gone to that region wished that the Indian titles should be extinguished, and a territorial government established.

Jan.,  
1854. In accordance with this wish Senator Stephen A. Douglas, of Illinois, proposed a bill in the United States' Senate, to organize this region into two territories, to be known as Kansas and Nebraska. This bill contained a clause repealing the Missouri Compromise, under the plea that it "was inconsistent with the principle of non-intervention by Congress with slavery in the States and Territories, as recognized by the compromise measures of 1850;" "it being the true intent of the act to leave the people thereof perfectly free to form and regulate their domestic institutions in their own way, subject only to the Constitution of the United States."

The people were taken by surprise. The question, so destructive to national harmony, and which it was hoped had been settled forever, had assumed a new form. The Missouri Compromise had been deemed a sacred compact between the south and the north, and as such, for the third of a century, had received the sanction of all parties. The irritations caused by the fiery discussions in Congress four years previous were by no means yet healed. A deep-toned feeling was excited, especially in the northern States.

It was just fifty years since the purchase of the territory, and up to this time nearly all its benefits had been enjoyed by those who held slaves. Meantime emigrants from the free States had been compelled, from their unwillingness to come in contact with slavery, to seek their homes and farms north of Missouri, and forego the advantages of the genial climate found in the latitude of that State.

These free laborers, as well as those who intended to

seek homes in the west, complained that this region, guaranteed to them by the Missouri Compromise, should be rendered liable to be made slaveholding. Conventions were held and petitions poured into both Houses of Congress, imploring those bodies not to disturb the tranquillity of the country, nor violate the compact so long held sacred. The South did not participate so much in this feeling.

CHAP.  
LVI.

1854.

In reply to these remonstrances it was said, the principle of "Squatter or Popular Sovereignty," would obviate all difficulty; by this principle the people of the territory would be free in their political action, and when they came to form their state constitutions, and ask admission into the Union, they could exercise this right and adopt or reject slavery. With this interpretation the bill passed Congress, after nearly four months' discussion, was signed by the President, and became the law of the land.

May.

Now came the struggle to secure the new State by sending emigrants, whose votes were to decide the question. Two years before, and not with reference to a contingency of this kind, the Legislature of Massachusetts incorporated a company known as "The Emigrants' Aid Society." This association had been inactive, but now its aid was invoked, and numbers were assisted to emigrate to Kansas. Similar societies were formed in other northern States. The emigrants from the free States went to remain and improve their claims, and found homes for their families. Emigrants came also from the Southern States, but with the exception of those who came from Missouri only a limited number have remained in the territory to improve their claims.

Conflicting opinions soon produced political parties known as Pro-Slavery and Free-State, and the practical application of the doctrine of "popular sovereignty" was

CHAP. appealed to, to test which party had the majority, and  
LVI. according to true democracy should rule.

1854. The first territorial election was held to choose a dele-  
Nov. gate to Congress, and four months later—a census in the  
Mar., meantime having been taken and the territory divided  
1855. into districts—another election was held to choose mem-  
bers to the Territorial Legislature. In both of these elec-  
tions, the pro-slavery party claimed that they had chosen  
their candidates, but the free-state men repudiated the  
election as fraudulent; giving as a reason that the polls  
were controlled by armed men from Missouri.

July The Territorial Legislature assembled at Pawnee and  
2. immediately adjourned to the Shawnee Mission, near the  
Missouri State line. They passed a series of laws, to  
which Governor Reeder refused his signature, on the  
ground that the Legislature, by the organic act, could not  
change the place of meeting appointed by himself. These  
laws were however passed by a two-thirds vote.

The Free State men held conventions, denied the le-  
gality of the legislature, and refused to obey the laws en-  
acted by it, and made arrangements to choose delegates  
to a Convention to form a Constitution. In due time this  
Oct. Convention assembled at Topeka, framed a Constitution  
rejecting slavery, and ordered it to be submitted to the  
vote of the people, who ratified it. One month later the  
people chose State officers and members for a State Legis-  
lature. Soon after Governor Reeder was removed from  
his office by the President.

Jan. During these ten months confusion reigned in the  
15. Territory. Outrages of almost every kind were com-  
mitted, robberies, murders, illegal arrests and property  
destroyed, most of which belonged to the Free State  
settlers.

Wilson Shannon, of Ohio, who had recently been ap-  
pointed Governor, now appeared and assumed office. He

declared himself in favor of the laws enacted at the Shawnee Mission.

CHAP.  
LVI.

The government, under the Free-State Constitution, was organized, and the contest took the form of civil war.

1855.  
Mar.  
4.

At the opening of the session of Congress, the delegate from Kansas, chosen as related above, appeared and demanded his seat. After a spicy discussion the House refused the demand, but appointed a committee to proceed to the Territory and summon witnesses in relation to the recent elections. In a month's time the committee had arrived in Kansas, and commenced the investigation. Their report sustained the charge that those elections had been carried by fraud.

Dec.,  
1855.

Mar.  
19.

The summer of 1856 was signalized by the commission of many outrages, committed in different parts of the Territory. The Free-State men armed themselves, and determined to defend their rights. Several conflicts ensued and many lives were lost. Presently Shannon received notice of his removal from office, and John W. Geary, of Pennsylvania, soon appeared as his successor. The new governor honestly labored to restore harmony. He ordered "all bodies of men combined, armed, and equipped with munitions of war, without authority of the government, instantly to disband, and quit the territory." Upon this the companies of Free-State men nearly all disbanded, but it was only partially obeyed by the other party, who had concentrated a force of more than two thousand men. The Governor, with the dragoons, threw himself between them and the town of Lawrence and prevented another conflict.

Sept.  
15.

The presidential canvass was now in progress. The main question at issue—the extension of slavery into the Territories or its limitation to the States wherein it already existed.

CHAP.  
LVI.

1853.

Within a few years political issues had somewhat changed. A party known as American, had arisen; their main principle opposition to foreign influence, and their motto, "Americans should rule America." The following year they were successful in most of the state elections. Meantime arose another party, composed principally of Whigs and Democrats, who were opposed to the extension of slavery into free territory. They were known as Republicans. On the other hand the Democrats announced themselves willing to let slavery go into the territories if the inhabitants thereof desired it. The latter party nominated James Buchanan, of Pennsylvania; the Republicans, John C. Fremont, of California, and the Americans, ex-president Fillmore.

The canvass was one of more than usual spirit. The passage of the Kansas-Nebraska bill had even added new interest to the main question at issue. It had taken deep hold of the minds of the people; and they never before gave such evidence of their independence, and repudiation of mere party ties.

Nov.,  
1856.

Mr. Buchanan was elected President, and John C. Breckinridge, of Kentucky, Vice-President.

Feb.  
17,  
1858.

The House of Representatives at Washington passed a bill, declaring the acts of the Territorial Legislature of Kansas null and void, both on the ground that its enactments "were cruel and oppressive," and that "the said legislature was not elected by the legal voters of Kansas, but was forced upon them by non-residents in violation of the organic act of the territory." This bill failed to pass the Senate.

On the 4th of March, Mr. Buchanan was inaugurated President. He was educated for the legal profession. At the age of twenty-three he served as a member of the Legislature of his native State. He was afterward a

member of the House of Representatives ten years; then Minister to Russia—sent by General Jackson—then a member of the Senate of the United States; then Secretary of State, under President Polk, and then Minister to Great Britain. Senator Lewis Cass was appointed Secretary of State, by the new President.

CHAP.  
LVI.

1857.

Under the auspices of the Territorial Legislature of Kansas an election was ordered for delegates to a convention for the purpose of framing a constitution, but under conditions to secure a pro-slavery majority of delegates. The Free State men, for the reasons already given, as well as others, refused to take part in the election. It was held, however, and a pro-slavery delegation chosen. Meanwhile the other party published an address to the people of the United States, in which they set forth the wrongs they had endured, and to which they were still subject.

June.

Soon after Governor Geary resigned, and the President appointed Robt. J. Walker, of Mississippi. The new Governor endeavored to remedy these evils, and promised the people of the territory a free expression of their wishes at the polls.

Owing to the influence of Governor Walker the Free State men consented to vote at the coming election for a delegate to Congress, and members for a Territorial Legislature. They, by a vote of more than two to one, chose their candidates.

Oct.

Shortly after this election, the delegates chosen as we have seen, met in convention at Lecompton, and speedily framed a constitution. It contained a provision adopting slavery, and this provision alone, the convention submitted to the people of Kansas to ratify or reject. Connected with this was a clause which made it necessary for those who were challenged at the polls "to take an oath to support the constitution if adopted," before they were

CHAP. permitted to deposit their vote. This was followed by a  
 LVI. proviso that the Constitution could not be amended be-  
 1857. fore the year 1864, and then only by the concurrence of  
 two-thirds of the members of both Houses of the Legisla-  
 ture and "a majority of all the citizens of the State."

The Free State men refused to vote on the ratification of this constitution, as they denied the authority that framed it; but it received some votes, and was declared adopted, and sent as such to Congress. There the discussion on the subject was as bitter as ever. It was denied that the people of Kansas were fairly treated in not having the opportunity to vote upon the adoption of the entire constitution as implied by the doctrine of "Popular Sovereignty," said to be the essence of the Kansas-Nebraska bill.

April Finally, a bill was passed to submit the constitution  
 30. to the people of Kansas, but on two conditions: one, that if they failed to ratify it, they would not be permitted to enter the Union until they had a population of ninety-three thousand; the other, if they did ratify it, they should receive certain of the public lands for State purposes. In the face of these strange conditions the people of Kansas, on the 2d of August, rejected the constitution by an overwhelming majority.

1858.

After this decided and noble stand by the Free State men in Kansas there was a lull in the excitement. Meanwhile the people were preparing for the territory to assume her place among the States of the Union when the whole nation was startled by an effort to free the slaves by force of arms. The plan was organized and attempted to be carried out by John Brown—better known as "Old John Brown of Osawatomie," at which place he lived, and who, in the Kansas troubles, had beaten off an armed force of the pro-slavery party five times as great as his own, the former having an unusual number of men killed and wounded.

1859,  
 Oct.

This singular, conscientious, determined man, who under no circumstances ever swerved from what he thought was right, was a native of Connecticut, and descended from Peter Brown, a humble Pilgrim on the Mayflower. Religiously trained, he became a church-member at the age of sixteen; thoughtful for his years, at twelve he found himself an instinctive hater of slavery from seeing his friend, a colored boy about his own age, grossly abused without redress. This hatred of the system was never modified, but grew intenser with his years. At the time of which we speak he was a resident of New York State. When he learned of the efforts to force the system of bondage on the territory of Kansas he hastened thither, where he already had four sons, and three others who soon after followed their father. There in his peculiar way he became a leader among the Free State men in their conflicts with their enemies from across the boundary line of the territory and Missouri. In one of these battles beside him lay a son just killed, while the father in one hand held the pulse of another mortally wounded, and in the other grasped a rifle. Some time before another son had been murdered. With only twenty-one men he seized the United States arsenal at Harpers Ferry in northern Virginia. He may have supposed the slaves would avail themselves of an opportunity to fight for their freedom, but none joined him. They always looked for some outside influence to secure their emancipation. John Brown is represented as being kind and sympathetic, and his heart was moved as he contemplated the system of bondage under which the slaves moaned. He thought himself in the line of duty, and while we may respect his motives we cannot his prudence. The explanation may be that he brooded so long over the wrongs suffered by the slaves that he became

CHAP.  
LVI.  
1859.

Oct.  
16.

CHAP. partially crazed on the subject, and overlooked the insu-  
 LVI. perable difficulties in carrying out *his* plan for their  
 1859. emancipation. In the conflict which ensued with the  
 State authorities, who were aided by United States ma-  
 rines, he was wounded and captured, after a severe strug-  
 gle, in which thirteen of his party were killed—two of  
 them his sons—six were made prisoners, and two escaped.  
 During his trial he lay on his couch in the court-room.  
 He met death in a calm and heroic manner.

This was the only instance in which an Abolitionist,  
 as such, attempted to secure the freedom of the slaves by  
 means of violence.

Three days after the execution of Brown, Congress  
 assembled, and during its session was laid before it a  
 constitution voted upon and approved by the people of  
 1860, Kansas. A bill admitting the State passed the House,  
 June 7. but failed in the Senate.

1858. A treaty having been made with Japan that govern-  
 ment sent, in the summer of 1860, a number of officials  
 to bring it when ratified to the United States. This im-  
 posing embassy consisted in all of seventy-one persons of  
 various ranks. They were received and treated as the  
 guests of the Nation, and in consequence of this treaty  
 important commercial relations have since existed between  
 the United States and that empire.

Minnesota was admitted into the Union, and allowed  
 to have two representatives until the next apportionment  
 of members among the several States.

A change was made in the laws in relation to the  
 issue of patents, by which "all patents hereafter granted  
 shall remain in force seventeen years from date of issue,  
 and all extensions of such patents are hereby prohibited."

1860. The Eighth Census of the United States sums up as  
 follows: Entire population, 31,443,790; of whom 3,953,-  
 529 are slaves.

The question of the extension of slavery into the Territories, was by no means decided in the presidential contest of 1856. During the subsequent four years the discussion of the subject still continued in Congress and among the people. In proportion as they read and judged for themselves, did party spirit lose its despotic influences, and the change in public sentiment, especially in the non-slaveholding States, was unprecedented. Many thousands of intelligent voters, who once acquiesced in the policy of the extension of the system, would no longer lend their sanction to measures the tendency of which they now better understood.

CHAP.  
LVI.

1860.

In view of subsequent events, a more than usual interest will ever belong to the exposition of principles as set forth in what are termed "platforms" of the parties in nominating their respective candidates for the office of President in 1860.

The Democratic party, at a convention held in Charleston, South Carolina, became divided into two hostile sections—the Breckinridge and Douglas—thus designated from their prominent leaders. One section—the Breckinridge—reaffirmed, with explanatory resolutions, the principles adopted by the entire party four years before at its convention held in Cincinnati. They proclaimed the "non-interference of Congress with slavery in the Territories or in the District of Columbia," and "The admission of new States with or without domestic slavery, as they may elect." The other section—Douglas—also adopted the Cincinnati platform, and likewise affirmed "That as differences of opinion exist in the Democratic party as to the nature and extent of the powers of a Territorial Legislature, and as to the powers and duties of Congress under the Constitution of the United States over the institution of slavery within the Territories," "That the party will abide by the decisions of the Supreme

1856.

CHAP.  
LVI.

1860.

1849.

Court of the United States on the questions of Constitutional law." These resolutions are significant. That court had recently given an opinion known as the Dred Scott Decision, which was now assumed to sanction the doctrine, first announced by John C. Calhoun, that the Constitution recognized slavery, and sanctioned and protected it in the Territories.<sup>1</sup> On the contrary, the Republican party denied that this special decision of the court had a legitimate bearing on the subject, it being a side issue, and therefore null and void; and now, since other means had failed in Kansas, used only to introduce covertly the system of human bondage into the Territories. The latter party, at their convention held in Chicago, announced that "the maintenance of the principles promulgated in the Declaration of Independence and embodied in the Federal Constitution, is essential to the preservation of our Republican Institutions." "That all men are created equal; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights;" and "That the Federal Constitution, the rights of the States and the union of the States, must and shall be preserved;" also the rights of the States should be maintained inviolate, "especially the right of each State to order and control its own domestic institutions according to its own judgment exclusively." "That the normal condition of all the Territory of the United States is that of FREEDOM," and they denied "the authority of Congress, of a Territorial Legislature, or of individuals, to give legal existence to slavery in any Territory of the United States."

Still another party, heretofore mainly known as American, now adopted the designation of "Constitutional Union," and proclaimed as their platform, "The Constitution of the country, the union of the States, and the enforcement of the laws."

<sup>1</sup> See Hist., pp. 832, 833.

## CHAPTER LVII.

### BUCHANAN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Traits of Character, North and South.—Comparative Intelligence in the Free and Slave States.—Benevolent Operations.—Foreign Population.—Material Progress.—Compromises.—Republican Party.—Democratic Convention.—Presidential Election.—Intent of Personal Liberty bills.—Union Men.—The Corner-Stone.—Legislatures and Conventions South.—Non-coercion.—Feeling in the Border States.—Finances.—Buchanan's Message.—Fort Sumter Occupied by Anderson.—The Preparations.—Yulee's Letter.—No Vote of the People Allowed.—Mr. Lincoln's Journey.—Convention at Montgomery.—Fallacies —England and Cotton.

BEFORE entering upon the narrative of the great Rebellion, and to fully understand its cause, we must notice certain influences that have had a share in moulding the characteristics of the American people both North and South. Though the people of both sections take pride in the same ancestry and cling to the same traditions, cherish the same love of country and have the same belief in Christianity, yet certain influences during a period of two centuries produced slightly marked characteristics. The Southern colonists, especially of Virginia and the Carolinas, had their notions of rank and aristocracy, and prejudices against the descendants of the Anglo-Saxons who settled in the Northern portion of the land. The Northern colonists had their prejudices, which grew out of religious differences in the mother country. The seven years' struggle of the Revolution brought the people nearer together by a bond of sympathy. The Northern colonists had a better appreciation

CHAP.  
LVII.

1857.

CHAP. of education, and they labored to extend its influence to  
 LVII. all, beginning at the most humble, thus elevating the  
 1857. people by making them intelligent and moral; and for  
 this purpose they established common schools.<sup>1</sup> As labor  
 with them was respected, so voluntary ignorance was  
 despised, while that which was involuntary was pitied,  
 and an effort made to remove the evil. Massachusetts  
 and the other colonies of New England were in this  
 respect in contrast with Virginia and the Carolinas: the  
 latter made scarcely an effort to instruct the children of  
 the people at large, providing no general system of com-  
 mon-school education.<sup>2</sup> In these colonies—afterward in  
 the States—the people of limited means were non-slave-  
 holders, and when they aspired to a higher rank in the  
 social scale they found themselves confronted with this  
 fact. Thus trammelled they made little advancement,  
 and in the course of time this contemptuous treatment on  
 the part of the aristocracy frittered away much of the  
 self-respect of that class of the community. This was  
 specially the case during the first sixty years of the nine-  
 teenth century. The laws prohibiting slaves learning to  
 read and write were most stringent, and persons who  
 should teach them were liable to punishment by fine and  
 imprisonment, while “a code of slave laws, the most  
 wicked that the world has ever seen, guaranteed the sub-  
 jection of the victims.”<sup>3</sup>

Just about one hundred years before the Declaration of  
 Independence, when free schools had been established for  
 a generation in the New England colonies, a Governor of  
 Virginia—Berkeley—in an apparently devout frame of  
 mind, when speaking of the colony, wrote: “I thank  
 God there are no free schools nor printing; and I hope  
 we will not have them these hundred years—God keep  
 us from both.”<sup>4</sup> His “hope” was virtually realized; as

<sup>1</sup> Hist., pp. 123, 124

Mackenzie's Nineteenth Century, p. 75.

<sup>2</sup> Hist., p. 235.

<sup>4</sup> Hist., pp. 138-142.

it was more than half a century after that before a printing press was at work in Virginia, and common schools waited nearly two centuries for their admission.

CHAP.  
LVII.  

---

1860.

Time has shown the effects of these two systems, so radically different, because the habits, the customs, and even the prejudices of the colonists passed over into the States, and though softened and modified in the transition, lasted long after the Revolution. For sake of convenience we compare New England and Virginia—they two being the most influential before that time and immediately afterward. In making a comparison we pass over about six generations to see more perfectly the results of the two systems of education. The one originating in Massachusetts was radical, commencing at the bottom and educating upward; the other in Virginia commenced at the highest rank in society and educated downward—but *never reached the bottom*.

Let us look at the census of the United States for 1860. It shows that the six New England States had a population of 3,135,383, lacking only 180,796 of being three times as large as that of the white inhabitants of Virginia—1,105,453. In New England we find of this population 81,576 persons, native-born, over twenty years of age, who could neither read nor write, and also of foreigners 75,554 of the same age, who were in a similar condition; thus about *fifteen-sixteenths* of this illiteracy belonged to foreigners, a large immigration of whom had been pouring into these States for *forty* years. For the most part, these people paid little or no attention to the education of their children. No doubt a very large proportion of these illiterates, though *native-born*, were the immediate descendants of these immigrants. We now turn to Virginia, and there we find 74,055 white native-born persons, over twenty years of age, who could neither read nor write, and of foreigners 3,152—that is, about *one-twenty-fourth* part.

CHAP.  
LVII.  
1860.

In New England we find that of persons over twenty years of age only *one* of the native-born in *thirty-eight and four-tenths* was unable to read and write, while in Virginia of the same class there was *one* in *fifteen*. Of the illiterates in the former about *fifteen-sixteenths* were foreigners; in the latter they were about *one in twenty-four*. Of the entire population of the free States of the Old Thirteen we find *one in thirty-eight* unable to read and write; of whites in the corresponding slave States, *one in fifteen*. Of the illiterates of the former States *eleven-fourteenths* were foreigners, and in the corresponding latter States they were *one in twenty-two*. In the free States admitted after the Revolution we find *one* illiterate in *thirty-three* of the population; of the whites in the corresponding slave States, *one in sixteen*; in the former *one-third* of this class were foreigners, in the latter *one-fourteenth*.

Under such influences it was not strange that so many of the *white* inhabitants of the slave States were not readers, much less thinkers. Had the mass been a reading people, and in consequence reasoners, with books and newspapers in every household, they never could have been induced, much less forced, into an attempt to destroy the Union in order to perpetuate slavery, and surely not in support of a *theoretical* interpretation of the constitution in respect to State Rights. The great majority of those migrating from the old to the new States or Territories, in order to secure a climate to which they were accustomed, passed almost entirely along the same parallels of latitude on which they had lived, and as they carried with them their institutions and habits, the contrast in respect to education and its results, as revealed by the census of 1860, was equally great between the new free and slave States as that between the Old Thirteen. Had common schools been as well supported and attended, even by the *whites*, in the slave as in the free States for

the last century, it is doubtful whether the system of slavery could have reached its vast proportions, and more likely it might so far have passed away as not to be a disturbing element in the nation, much less that for its protection and extension a war should be inaugurated.

CHAP.  
LVII.  
1857.

The general intelligence of the Northern portion of the country affected its material progress; the people of moderate means were self-respecting and industrious, and their material progress was continuous from generation to generation. In the Southern portion the people of moderate means unfortunately labored under great disadvantages. They were for the most part wanting in that general intelligence needed to secure success, and were stigmatized as the "white trash." With them industry was an irksome necessity, since they looked upon manual labor as the special province of the slave, and therefore degrading. The dignity of the intelligent farmer or mechanic, who read books, educated his children and obtained knowledge of passing events by reading the newspapers, was almost unknown to them. This was their great misfortune; the result of a disregard of their interests and their children's practiced for generations by their rulers.

For many years previous to the outbreak of the rebellion Northern newspapers not pleasing to certain leaders were virtually prohibited in the South, and by this means it was easy to deceive the non-slaveowners in respect to the true sentiments of the Northern people. In its influence upon society the system of slavery recognized but two classes: those who owned slaves and those who did not. The former claimed to be the aristocracy, and in their hands were the offices of state. Even wealth invested in lands and slaves gave the possessor a higher social position than the same amount acquired by the industry of the merchant or any other occupation.

The mass of the Southern people were grossly deceived by those who represented the people of the North as hostile to them; on the contrary, the sympathies of the Christian

**CHAP.** public of the free States had been unusually drawn out to-  
**LVI.** ward their fellow-citizens of the South. They appreciated  
**1857.** the difficulties under which they labored in respect to religious privileges; how they had never been trained, but to a very limited extent, either to support schools or the preaching of the Gospel. Benevolent societies (such as the American Tract, Home Missionary, Sunday School Union and others) labored for years to diffuse religious truths among the mass of the Southern people, especially the whites of moderate means, up to the time when their efforts were materially interfered with by political leaders who wished the relations of friendship and intercourse with the North to cease, as an aid to the accomplishment of their secret plan to break up the Union. Without going into details, these leaders assumed that the intercourse between the two sections by means of these operations did or would interfere with slavery, and their benevolent work was gradually restrained to such an extent that when the rebellion began it had nearly ceased, although, owing to intimate commercial relations, the merchants of Northern cities were more than usually liberal in aiding the benevolent and religious institutions of the South. Many other efforts were made to alienate the Southern people from the Northern; parents were urged not to send their daughters to schools or their sons to colleges in the free States; the separation of religious denominations into Southern or Northern was looked upon with pleasure by these leaders; as well as the alienation of churches of the same denomination. Only one denomination—the Methodist—divided on account of slavery alone; in accordance with the Discipline of that church a bishop has jurisdiction in all the States equally, and in this instance a slave-holding bishop became the occasion of the division of the denomination into the Churches North and South. Likewise, owing to the absence of a national system of finances, the moneyed interests of the country had not so great inducement to unite in preserving the Union as they would have had under a banking

**1844.**

system by means of which the rate of exchange in commercial transactions between different portions of the Union would have been merely nominal. At the commencement of the rebellion, and for years previous, the high rate of exchange through the medium of State banks was a heavy tax on the mercantile interests of the whole country.

CHAP.  
LVII.  
1844.

Previous to 1826 the system of slavery was acknowledged to be contrary to the spirit of Christianity; and among thoughtful business men or planters it was recognized as a wasteful system of labor. When a Northern member proclaimed on the floor of the House of Representatives that slavery, "while it subsists where it subsists, its duties are presupposed and sanctioned by religion," the sentiment was repudiated by the leading Southern statesmen. John Randolph, in one of his pungent remarks, exclaimed: "Sir, I envy neither the head nor the heart of that man from the North who rises to defend slavery upon principle." In the discussions held hitherto the subject had been treated almost entirely in respect to its political and economical bearings, its moral character being for the most part assumed. Its unwritten, inner history, as a moral evil in domestic relations, was infinitely worse than that of its economical; as in this form it permeated society and poisoned it at the fountain-head—the family.

Mar. 9,  
1826.

After the failure of Nullification the form of the discussion changed from the economical more to the moral aspects of slavery, which now found advocates who contended that the system was not inconsistent with the teachings of the Bible. In opposition to this the Abolitionists took a decided stand. The pioneer in this movement was Benjamin Lundy, who was soon joined by William Lloyd Garrison; the former dying, the latter continued with untiring zeal the conflict till the end was attained. Their efforts, feeble at first, were made by

1828  
to  
1863.

CHAP.  
LVII.1828.  
to  
1863.

means of newspapers and periodicals of quite limited circulation; to these were added lectures or speeches, and the formation of anti-slavery societies throughout the free States: and this continued for a generation.<sup>1</sup>

The Abolitionists made appeals to the slaveholders themselves to take the initiative in emancipating their slaves, and in recognizing on the score of humanity the inalienable rights of the negro as a man, and the sinfulness of holding him in bondage. Their leading members were specially careful to violate no law, but labor for the accomplishment of their object only by the presentation of the truth as they believed it; they used only moral means to secure their end, with but one exception—that of John Brown. They had themselves so clear conceptions of their own duty in the premises that they became indignant at the slowness of the conservatives in the church, who were unwilling to aid emancipation in the way marked out by these enthusiastic and self-appointed leaders. Nor is it remarkable that the prejudices of the former were roused by the abuse they received, and by the infidelity avowed by many of the Abolitionists. The latter were intensely earnest; they believed every word they said. Their startling invectives and fiery eloquence rang throughout the land like the tolling of a midnight tocsin. Their arguments compelled acquiescence in the unconscious hearer; the well-put truths they uttered sank deep into the minds of the people, like seed in a fertile soil, to be vivified and brought into life under other conditions.<sup>2</sup>

The slaveholders demanded acquiescence on the part of Northern merchants in the laws of Congress designed to return fugitive slaves, and to protect the system and further its interests—no others would they patronize. Competition in business in the Southern trade at the

<sup>1</sup> Hist. pp. 830, 835.<sup>2</sup> Hist. pp. 835, 836.

CHAP.  
 LVII.

1828  
 to  
 1863.

time was not so much in cheapening goods as in lengthening credits. If a publisher issued a book or a periodical in which were criticisms adverse to the system, even by implication, the newspapers of the South warned their readers against buying any books *whatever* of the offender. These demands, with others of a political character, prepared the reading people of the free States to take their stand when the crisis came. It was not till the deliberate firing on Sumter revealed its true spirit that the mass of intelligent people in the North recognized fully its deadly hostility to right and justice. This truth, like an intuition, flashed in their minds and conscience, and at once increased the number of its enemies a hundred-fold. Though the great majority of the people believed the system to be a moral, political and economical evil, they were perplexed as to the remedies to be applied in its removal. It was the farthest from their intentions that it should be removed by the horrors of war. They thought of no other means than moral, and certainly not by infringing the right of the slaveowner as guaranteed by the Constitution and the laws made under it. They hoped that the humane spirit of Christianity would finally abolish the system; but in truth the enactments of laws on the subject in the slave States were becoming harsher and harsher every year. It remained for the slaveowners to place themselves in a position which rid the country of the evil.

Another ground of dissatisfaction was the progress of the free States in material wealth and population. From about 1825 there had been a large emigration from the Old World, chiefly from Ireland, and mostly unskilled laborers; nearly all these settled in the free States, where they found employment principally in digging canals and building railroads. Scarcely any of these made their home in the States where slavery existed, because of the stigma resting

CHAP. upon manual labor, and also of the lack of enterprise in  
LVII. that section to furnish them employment. Meanwhile the  
1844. intelligence and industry of the free States were carrying them far in advance in the enterprises of mining, manufacturing and commerce. They had taken possession of the region north of the Ohio and east of the Great River, and of the northwest. These plains were covered with farms, and immense crops were harvested by means of machinery requiring not one eighth as many laborers as under the old system—the sickle and the scythe. An outlet had been obtained for their grains to Europe, almost a rival of cotton as an article of commerce. Thus the progress of the free States, as revealed every ten years by the census, was unparalleled; and in consequence of the increase of inhabitants they had in the same ratio increased their number of members in the House of Representatives. Though in 1860 the slaves had *twenty* representatives in the House, and these elected by their owners, yet the majority of the members from the free States was overwhelming, and could never be overcome, but was increasing from census to census, while the equality of members in the Senate was gone forever. The leaders foreseeing this result—the termination of their power to rule the National Government—determined to change their tactics in order to secure their ends.

In accordance with the sentiment held by the people of the free States of non-interference with slavery in the States where it existed, Congress in no instance ever passed a law that was intended to thus interfere; while the Territories, the common property of the whole Union, were governed under the Constitution by Congress alone, by means of laws of its own enactment, and by officers legally appointed by the President. The disposal of these Territories was thus given to Congress as the common property of the nation, under the control of the representatives of the whole people; and, as in other cases, in accordance with the cardinal principle of the National

## COMPROMISES.

Government, that the majority should rule. Hitherto, when differences of opinion or policy occurred, the difficulties were arranged by compromises. Such was the case in the famous Missouri Compromise.<sup>1</sup> And in the days of South Carolina nullification by a compromise in respect to the tariff.<sup>2</sup> In the annexation of Texas, a Territory more than five times as great as that of New York or Pennsylvania, the same spirit prevailed; and that Territory was handed over to the slaveholders for their exclusive benefit, though it had cost thousands of precious lives in the war which ensued with Mexico, and an immense amount of national treasure. This concession was made by the free States, when every intelligent person knew that the profit would inure to the slave States alone, and to the extension of their system of enforced labor. The acquisition of California was not then in contemplation, and this concession was an exhibition of good will by the North toward the South. The population of Texas, though its territory was so extensive, would only entitle her to come into the Union as a *single* State, and not *five*, into which it could be divided in accordance with the articles of annexation.<sup>3</sup> But California, owing to peculiar circumstances, soon acquired the requisite population to make a State, and was admitted into the Union; her people by their vote prohibiting slavery, preserving the balance of power between the free and the slave States in the United States Senate. With this result the advocates of slavery were not satisfied, and they resolved to make another attempt to secure the coveted majority. The plan now adopted was to repeal the Missouri Compromise,<sup>4</sup> which had remained intact for *thirty-four* years, and secure for their purpose the region west of that State. This repeal raised the question, especially in the free States, Will the advocates of slavery never be satisfied? Are the politicians, for personal ambition, to keep the

CHAP.  
LVII.  
1844.

<sup>1</sup> Hist. pp. 692-695.

<sup>2</sup> Hist. pp. 748-749.

<sup>3</sup> Hist. pp. 723-726.

Hist. pp. 846-847 and 851

CHAP. nation continually embroiled in this question? It was  
 LVII. only about ten years since Texas had been yielded to the  
 1844. slave owners—and yet the cry was for more territory!

The people of the free States, as they could not restore the “Missouri Compromise,” were forced to accept the “squatter sovereignty” theory, and they put it in practice by sending settlers to Kansas Territory who intended to make it their home and that of their children; and, complying with the law in word and in spirit, when the time came they voted to come into the Union a *free State*.<sup>1</sup> These various measures to extend the system of servitude into the Territories excited an unusual resistance in the free States, and a party was formed—the Republican—to prevent by legal means that result. The pledges of the new party were not to interfere with the institution in the States, but only treat it, in respect to the Territories, as Congress had been accustomed to treat other questions, subject to the will of the majority, in accordance with the received notions of the true rule of the people. And in good faith the free States accepted the principle that the inhabitants of a Territory about to become a State might determine for themselves whether it should come in free or slave. It was fondly hoped this would end the controversy. The slaveholders were still unsatisfied, and they prepared to carry out their plans of seceding from the Union. The census of 1860 was about to show a still greater increase of population in the free States, and in consequence a still greater majority in the House; while the ratio of their material prosperity was greater than ever. The same year Abraham Lincoln, of Illinois, was elected President, and Hannibal Hamlin, of Maine, Vice President. This was proclaimed a sectional election, for the express purpose of destroying slavery and ruining the South. It is proper to notice the means used to obtain this result.

<sup>1</sup> Hist. pp. 851, 878.

## PRESIDENTIAL ELECTION.

Plans were laid to secede long before the time the political parties were accustomed to make their nominations, and it was openly proclaimed that if an "Abolitionist"—thus designating a Republican—should be elected, the slave States would secede. When the Democratic Convention assembled at Charleston, South Carolina, for the purpose of nominating a candidate for the presidency, it was soon discovered that ulterior views were entertained by certain members from the extreme Southern States. These demanded of their fellow members from the free States expression on the subject of slavery contrary to their convictions, and they also endeavored to repudiate Mr. Douglas, the most popular candidate of the party in the free States. The disunionists, unable to enforce their own plans, seceded from the Convention, and thus prevented a nomination. The united Democratic party could, with ease, have elected their candidate, but should he not be a pronounced secessionist the Southern wing determined to divide the party, and thus secure the election of a Republican, and seize upon that as a pretext for breaking up the Union.

The Convention thus disorganized did not make a nomination, but adjourned to meet at Baltimore June 18th, and the seceders to meet at Richmond, June 11th: Mr. Douglas was nominated by the conservatives, and John C. Breckenridge by the seceders, or disunionists.

The candidates for the presidency were now Abraham Lincoln, of Illinois, nominated by the Republicans; Stephen A. Douglas, of the same State, John C. Breckenridge, of Kentucky, and John Bell, of Tennessee, on a platform of the "Union and the Constitution." On the sixth of November the election was held and Mr. Lincoln was chosen, he having 180 electoral votes; Mr. Breckenridge 72, Mr. Bell 39, and Mr. Douglas 12. Of the popular vote Mr. Lincoln, 1,857,610; Mr. Douglas, 1,365,976; Mr. Breckenridge, 847,953, and Mr. Bell 590,631. Owing to the system of electing by States, Mr. Lincoln had a majority of

CHAP.  
LVII.

1860.

Nov.  
6.

CHAP. the electoral vote, while he had only a plurality of the popu-  
 LVII. lar vote, and Mr. Douglas had only 12 electoral votes to Mr.  
 1860. Breckenridge's 72, while the former's majority over the latter in the popular vote was more than half a million. It is supposed that not more than two-thirds of the popular vote for Breckenridge really desired secession, and then the vote in favor of Union was nearly seven to one; and even if they all desired it, the vote was then about four and a half to one.

The election of Mr. Lincoln was hailed with joy by the secessionists, especially in Charleston, South Carolina, which city had been foremost in these hostile demonstrations against the National Government. A State Convention, as soon as the result of the presidential election was known, assembled in Charleston, and declared that "the union before existing between South Carolina and other States under the name of the United States of America was dissolved." The sympathizers of the movement in the "Cotton States" sent telegraphic messages of congratulation to South Carolina on her prompt action in seceding, and also promised aid; this was done to manufacture public sentiment. The stratagem did not fully succeed, the mass of the Southern people were by no means in favor of the disruption of the Union; the moderate men urged that nothing should be done harshly or hurriedly, their sentiment was: "wait till Mr. Lincoln is inaugurated, and commits the overt act." Virginia urged that time should be given for an effort in Congress to obtain certain measures; such as the repeal of the Personal Liberty bills in some of the free States; and a pledge that the fugitive slave law would be henceforth more promptly enforced; and the concession that the Constitution authorized slavery in the territories, and the protection of slaves as property.

The secessionists did not charge that the presidential election was unfair or illegal, but they assumed that the administration about to come into power would do something especially against slavery. The "Cotton States"

complained bitterly that the Fugitive Slave Law was not promptly enforced in the free States, but was obstructed by the Personal liberty bills; yet, the truth was, very few slaves from the Cotton States ever reached the free States. The runaways were from the border States, who were not so strenuous on the subject as to wish, on that account, to break up the Union, but proposed to remedy the evil complained of by influencing Congress. The Personal Liberty bills in the free States were a dictate of humanity and were designed to accomplish two objects: one, to prevent the colored freemen of the free States being kidnapped, and the other to secure to those who were charged with fleeing from slavery a fair and impartial trial as guaranteed to every person by the Constitution of the United States. If it was established that the person thus seized had escaped from service, these laws did not forbid the rendition of the fugitive to the person claiming such service. The Fugitive Slave law consigned the person thus seized to a commissioner to be handed over to slavery in such haste as to exclude him from the benefit of a fair trial, at the place of his residence, where he was known and could obtain witnesses.

CHAP.  
LVII.  
1860.

Meantime, by high handed measures the Union men in the Cotton States were gradually coerced and rendered almost powerless under the persistent efforts of the secessionists. Throughout the slave States the non-slaveowners, almost universally, were Union men, and opposed to secession; and they looked upon the Civil War as a war designed by those who commenced it to perpetuate and extend that system. In voting, when they had opportunity they rejected the principle of secession; neither did they, as a class, enter the Confederate army until forced into its ranks by an unrelenting conscription.

It is strange that these leaders were unable or unwilling to see that the decline, which was noticeable forty years before, of the material prosperity of the slave States, was owing to that wasteful system; and still more strange that in

CHAP.  
LVII.

1860.

1861.

Mar.

21.

the face of these facts they were continually devising means to extend a system of labor which failed to give them success as a people. An exponent of the basis of the confederacy may be found in an address by its Vice President and ablest statesman, A. H. Stephens; he proclaims the true condition of the negro to be that of servitude as an inferior being; alluding to the United States Constitution and its framers he said: "This stone (slavery) which was rejected by the first builders is become the chief stone of the corner in our new edifice." And these disunionists went to war to protect and extend slavery; the National Government, as a matter of defense, to protect the public property and to defend the Union of the States.

The Governors of the States of South Carolina, Georgia, Mississippi, Virginia, Louisiana, and Alabama took measures to have special sessions of the Legislatures called, or to have conventions held the members of which were to be elected by the people. The States of North Carolina and Arkansas did not take action by their Legislatures, as the majority of the people were opposed to secession. Thus was Tennessee also loyal to the Union. This loyalty was greatly strengthened by Andrew Johnson in the United States Senate and Emerson Etheridge in the House.

The doctrine that the President could not *coerce* a State was strenuously urged as a political truth; and it gave the disunionists great encouragement to know that Mr. Buchanan, the President, was understood to hold that opinion, hence it became necessary to press matters in order to complete the secession movement before Mr. Lincoln's inauguration. Meetings to promote the cause were held in prominent places in the Cotton States, and the most remarkable misrepresentations were put forth in respect to the action and the sentiments of the people of the free States; and these passed without contradiction, for that was prevented by the exclusion of Northern declarations to the contrary and Northern newspapers. It is

not strange that by these means the people, especially the least intelligent, were grossly deceived.

CHAP.  
LVII.  
1860.

The majority of the people of the border States was opposed to these disunion measures; they knew that in case of war between the two sections they must suffer most from their geographical position, and they did not wish to be made a shield for their rash neighbors. These secession measures were planned and carried out by comparatively very few men, the people scarcely having an opportunity to take action on the subject. When the Colonies complained to England the people had the opportunity of freely expressing their views.

The events transpiring had an influence upon the finances of the country. Business began to decline, and capital, ever sensitive, to withdraw from investment. The vast quantities of merchandise on hand were thrown upon the market both by the importer and the domestic manufacturer. Early in November almost the only trade with the South was that of fire-arms; and former debts from that section were unpaid, while exchange was so high as to be almost ruinous to the honorable Southern merchants who wished to pay their Northern creditors. Meanwhile some of the Southern State Legislatures authorized the suspension of specie payments by the banks, and also a *suspension* of payments of debts due Northern creditors. This state of trade affected the National Government, and it was forced to borrow money at high rates of interest to pay the current expenses.

Nov

The forts, arsenals, and navy-yards in the South had very few soldiers in them to protect the United States property; only eighty men were in Fort Moultrie in Charleston Harbor, where, from indications, would be the first assault upon the authority of the Government. The venerable Lieutenant-General Scott urged the President for permission to throw a sufficient number of men into the fort to defend it from any attack the insurgents might make. But in vain. The President in his timidity and

CHAP. trammels of party would not comply with this patriotic  
 LVII.  
 1860. request. The loyal people were astounded at this apathy or remission of duty.

The Legislature of South Carolina provided for the military defense of the State; they were henceforth to be "a people happy, prosperous, and free." The army and navy officers—natives of the State, more than sixty in number—were urged to resign their commissions and join the ranks of secession. "Vigilance Associations" were formed throughout the State; these assumed "full power to decide all cases that might be brought before them," "power to arrest all suspicious white persons and bring them before the Executive Committee for trial," to put down all negro preachings, prayer-meetings, and all congregations of negroes, that they (the Associations) might deem unlawful. Under these committees great numbers—because they were from the North—of men and women, teachers, preachers, travelers, and others were driven from the State.

Dec.  
 3.

The second session of the 36th Congress began, and President Buchanan sent in his Annual Message, in which he ascribed the existing evils between the States to the "violent agitation of the slavery question throughout the North for the last quarter of a century, which had at length produced its malign influence on the slaves, and inspired them with some vague notions of freedom." He announced that the revenue must be collected; he denied the right of a State to secede, but he had no authority under the Constitution to coerce a State—a doctrine very consoling to those who had entered upon the treasonable attempt to break up the Union. He suggested that the late election of President did not afford just cause for dissolving the Union; that the incoming President could not, if he wished, interfere with slavery; he was the executor of the laws, not the maker nor the expounder. These facts the disunion leaders well knew, but they were encouraged by this announcement of non-coercion to urge the

slave States into secession before the new President was inaugurated. CHAP.  
LVII.

1860.

Discussions continued in both Houses of Congress; resolutions in great numbers were introduced by the members, to be referred to the Committee of Thirty-three, which had been appointed on the state of the country. These resolutions show the state of feeling of the members on the subject, and indeed of all the people, their constituents. Efforts were made by the committee to arrive at a satisfactory result by guaranteeing what the slaveowners desired, but it was soon seen that all conciliatory measures were vain; the secessionists did not want compromises; nothing short of absolute separation would satisfy them; and the thinking portion of the people saw that no concessions would avert the calamity of an attempt to destroy the Union.

Floyd, the Secretary of War, early in December passed over to the Governor of South Carolina the United States arsenal at Charleston under the pretext of preventing its being seized by the mob. Here were 70,000 stand of arms, the quotas designed for several Southern States. On the day on which South Carolina seceded he sent an order to the commandant of the Alleghany arsenal, near Pittsburg, "to ship 78 guns to Newport, near Galveston, Texas, and 46 guns to Ship Island, near Balize, at the mouth of the Mississippi river." These forts were far from being finished or ready for their guns, but they were to be slyly transferred to the secessionists. The loyal people of Pittsburg protested against the shipment and the President countermanded the order. These guns were ten and eight-inch columbiads, the largest and finest in the country.

Dec.  
24.

Three days after South Carolina seceded Major Robert Anderson, who was in command of the forts in Charleston Harbor, dismantling Fort Moultrie, spiking the guns and burning the carriages, evacuated it, taking with him its munitions of war, and occupied Fort Sumter. Prudence dictated this transfer, as no reinforcements came and Fort

Dec.  
27.

CHAP. LVII.  
1860. Moultrie could easily be taken on the land side, as that was unfortified. Castle Pinckney, another fort, was dismantled in the same manner.

This movement created the most intense excitement throughout the land; the Union portion thinking it an indication that the government would resist the secessionists. In the South the spirit of secession was more than ever rampant. The leaders professed to believe this the first advance in "coercing" a State. Major Anderson had only seventy-nine effective men, but in that little band were no traitors.

Forts Moultrie and Pinckney were at once occupied by the State militia, under orders from Governor Pickens. These were armed from the United States arsenal. It had been proclaimed that "our young men will do the storming and escalading; our slaves will raise the crops, and make our ditches, glacis, and earthworks for our defense." In accordance with this, more than a thousand negroes, sent by their masters, were put to work to repair the forts and mount guns. This could easily have been prevented by shells from Fort Sumter's guns, but Major Anderson had orders to act only on the defensive. Soon as possible commissioners from Charleston came to Washington and demanded of the President either to order Major Anderson to evacuate all the forts in the harbor or reoccupy Fort Moultrie! This demand, so arrogant in its manner and terms, was not granted. From this time onward the "vigilance committees" were a greater terror than ever to the Union men and women, especially those of Northern birth. The atrocities inflicted upon them and the free negroes would seem incredible in this age, if the spirit which inspired them is not recognized.

The Collector of the Port of Charleston began to pay over to the State authorities the duties he collected. The President resolved to collect the duties on shipboard by sending a revenue cutter to lie off the harbor. He removed the Collector from office and nominated another; this nom-

ination he sent to the Senate for confirmation, but it was rejected by means of a few Northern Democratic Senators aiding those from the South.

CHAP.  
LVII.  
1861.

At a caucus held at Washington by the Senators from seven of the Southern States it was resolved to assume, for the present, the political control, and also the military affairs, of the South; to advise the calling of a convention of delegates from these seceding States, to meet at Montgomery on the 13th of the following February; to coerce the border States to secede, and in some way influence Maryland into a conflict with the National Government. They were of the opinion that by remaining in the Senate, though their States had seceded, they might prevent the passage of any measures such as the Volunteer, Force, or Loan bills, and thus disable the incoming administration from defending the Government's authority. In a letter\* written from Washington, and dated January 7th, Yulee, one of the Senators from Florida, says, in speaking of the above bills: "Whereas, by remaining in our places until the 4th of March, it is thought we can keep the hands of Mr. Buchanan tied and disable the Republicans from effecting any legislation which will strengthen the hands of the incoming administration." Yet these Senators were at this very time under oath to support the Constitution and the Government. They assumed that Mr. Lincoln would be compelled to wait until a special session of the new Congress could assemble in order to vote supplies, authorize the necessary military expenses and calls for volunteers.

Jan.  
6.

These leaders in only one State, South Carolina, permitted the people to vote direct on the subject of secession. The conventions, to which the people elected delegates with the understanding that their action was to be submitted to them for their approval or rejection, took the responsibility to pass ordinances of secession, upon which they did not dare give the people an opportunity to pass

\* This letter, among other documents, was found at Fernandina, Florida, by the Union forces.

CHAP.  
LVII.

1861.

judgment by their vote. This was contrary to their own constitutional form of making organic changes in their own State government. Only one State—Louisiana—in the entire South paid its own postage. The annual expense of carrying the mails in those States averaged annually about three and a half million of dollars more than the postage collected. This, however, was not assumed as one of the grounds of secession.

Jan.  
30.

The difficulties of the Kansas question, which had lasted over five years, were at length ended by that Territory being admitted into the Union as a free State. A month later the Territories, Nevada, Colorado, and Dacotah, were organized. Congress by its silence on the subject leaving the question of slavery to be acted upon by the people themselves, when they should apply for admission into the Union.

Feb.  
11.

Though the President elect had designed to journey in as quiet manner as possible from his home in Springfield, Illinois, to Washington, yet by the great anxiety of the people to see him he was induced to travel more slowly and to visit various places on the route. The Legislatures of the States through which he was to pass cordially invited him to visit their assemblies and become their guest. On the morning of his leaving home his neighbors crowded to the depot to bid him farewell. He made a feeling address, in the course of which he said: "My friends, no one not in my position can appreciate the sadness I feel at this parting. A duty devolves upon me which is, perhaps, greater than that which has devolved upon any other man since the days of Washington. He never would have succeeded except for the aid of Divine Providence upon which at all times he relied. I feel that I can not succeed without the same Divine aid which sustained him. I hope you, my friends, will all pray that I may receive that same Divine assistance, with which success is certain." He traveled slowly by special trains to Washington; at all stations, towns and cities, throngs of

people welcomed him, showing an intense interest, for at no time previous had a Chief Magistrate entered upon his office in circumstances so perilous to the nation.

CHAP.  
LVII.  
1861.

Delegates from six of the seceded States assembled in Convention at Montgomery, Alabama, to frame a constitution for the Confederacy. They copied very closely that of the United States, only introducing articles in respect to slaves and slavery; sanctioning the idea of property in man, which idea Madison and the other fathers of the United States Constitution repudiated. The Constitution of the Confederate States in one article reads; "No bill of attainder, or *ex-post facto* law, or law denying or impairing the right of property in negro slaves, shall be passed." The convention established a provisional government and elected Jefferson Davis President, and A. H. Stephens, of Georgia, Vice-President. These were duly inaugurated, Davis making an address in which he assumed the right of the seceding States to take possession of the United States forts and property within their boundaries and settle for them afterward; that "the commercial world had an interest in our exports (meaning cotton) scarcely less than our own;" he suggested "the well known resources for retaliation upon the commerce of an enemy."—One of the most remarkable fallacies with which the disunion leaders deceived themselves was that England would aid them materially in order to obtain cotton for her factories. Though the governing classes in that country, with but few exceptions, gave the Confederacy their sympathy, yet they were too politic to enter upon war to obtain cotton from these States when it could be had from other sources at a little greater expense. At this result the disappointment of the leaders of the Confederacy was beyond expression. On a par with this want of wisdom were their mistaken views of the character of the people of the free States. They seemed to forget that the industrial activity and energy which they had displayed in their onward progress would now be applied to a civil war.

Feb.  
4.

Feb.  
18.

## CHAPTER LVIII.

### LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION.

The Inauguration.—Effect of the Inaugural.—Bombardment of Sumter.—The President's Call for Volunteers.—The Responses.—Riot in Baltimore.—The Spirit of Loyalty.—Confederate Congress at Richmond.—Feeling in Missouri and Kentucky.—Advance into Virginia.—Col. Ellsworth's Death.—Proclamations of Generals.—Instructions to United States Ministers Abroad.—English Neutrality.—Big Bethel Skirmish.—West Virginia's Loyalty.—Enemy Driven Out.—Battle of Bull Run.—The Effect.—Missouri.—Battle of Wilson's Creek.—Death of General Lyon.—Kentucky's Legislation.—Finances and the Army.—Ball's Bluff Disaster.—Hatteras Expedition.—Mason and Slidell.—Battle of Belmont.—The Invasion of Kentucky.—Battle of Mill Spring.—Davis's Special Message.—Meeting of Congress.—The Union Army.—Edwin M. Stanton.—Capture of Forts Henry and Donelson.—Confederate Retreat.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1831.  
Mar.

4.

THE day of Mr. Lincoln's inauguration drew near; as it approached the painful suspense and anxiety of the people increased. Rumors were afloat of plots to prevent the new President from assuming office, and indeed of threatened injury to his person. The military were called out under the orders of General Scott; the first time in our history thought necessary to protect a Chief Magistrate from banded conspirators. In his inaugural the President announced that he should enforce the laws of the Union in accordance with his oath of office. "The power confided to me will be used to hold, occupy and possess the property and places belonging to the government, and collect the duties and imposts." Alluding to the secessionists, he says: "The

government will not assail you; you can have no conflict without being yourselves the aggressors." His manner betokened a man cool and determined, but of kindly instincts, and one who fully appreciated the novelty of his situation. The inaugural gave universal satisfaction, except to those who, from their open or secret opposition to the government, would not approve its sentiments of loyalty. It strengthened the Union men of the South and created a very favorable impression in the Border States. But the secessionists proclaimed it was a war measure, and the Confederate government issued orders for the people to prepare for the conflict. The Southern newspapers more fully expressed the views of the disunion leaders. They urged immediate action; in the Border States they expressed opposition to "coercion"—a favorite term of those who wished to gain time for the inauguration of civil war. Mr. Lincoln's principal cabinet officers were: William H. Seward, of New York, Secretary of State; Salmon P. Chase, of Ohio, Secretary of Treasury; Simon Cameron, of Pennsylvania, Secretary of War; Gideon Welles, of Connecticut, Secretary of Navy.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1861.

The Confederate government endeavored to "*coerce*" the Border States to join them, by prohibiting the importation of slaves into the Confederacy from the United States, "except by persons emigrating thereto for the purpose of settlement or residence." This was specially aimed at Virginia, for the sale of surplus negroes from that State to the Cotton States averaged annually several million dollars. This law would materially affect that portion of the State east of the mountains, where the slaves were numerous, but not the portion west, where there were but few, and where the people were almost universally in favor of preserving the integrity of the Union.

Mar  
11.

The Confederate authorities desired, by means of commissioners, to treat as an independent nation with the United States government; but as such they were not recognized.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1861.

The inaugural gave encouragement to the Union sentiment in the Border States. Kentucky refused to call a State Convention; Tennessee, by a majority of 50,000, resolved to remain in the Union; North Carolina appeared to be more loyal than ever, and even Virginia began to show strong attachment to the old order of things, but her people were not permitted to have a voice in their own destiny.

From the inauguration onward for some weeks, Fort Sumter was the subject of much anxiety both South and North; the former with hopes it would be evacuated, the latter for the most part that it might be maintained, and its garrison reinforced, and above all that there should be no concessions to men with arms in their hands, setting the authority of the government at defiance. Mr. Lincoln, slow and cautious in judgment, determined that Sumter should not be evacuated but defended, and let the responsibility rest upon those who should make the attack. The United States Senate, then in session, was also opposed to the withdrawal of the garrison.

A similar scene occurred in the harbor of Pensacola. Lieutenant Slemmer evacuated Fort McRae and passed over to Fort Pickens, which, by the almost superhuman exertions of his men and with aid of marines from the ships of war off the harbor, he fortified and held the enemy at defiance. During the night, boats with muffled oars brought him provisions and munitions and men, landing them safely on the island on which stood the Fort.

The government resolved to send provisions to Sumter; preparations for this purpose were made in the port of New York. At Charleston, General G. T. Beauregard, unmolested by Anderson, had been for weeks fortifying points on the harbor to prevent ships entering, and also to attack Sumter if not surrendered. President Lincoln sent a messenger to inform Governor Pickens of his intention of sending provisions to the garrison of Fort Sumter. The steward of the Fort had been warned a few days before

that he would not be permitted to purchase fresh provisions in the Charleston market.

Beauregard telegraphed to Jefferson Davis, at Montgomery, the information received from President Lincoln. The Confederate Cabinet was agitated; should they take the awful responsibility of commencing civil war? After two days came a telegram directing Beauregard to demand the surrender of the fort as soon as possible. The demand was made with the promise of facilities for transporting the troops and their private property. Major Anderson courteously refused to surrender his trust, incidentally remarking to the messengers—Beauregard's aids—that his provisions would last only for a few days. This refusal was telegraphed to Davis, and also the remark in respect to the provisions. Davis replied, saying: "If Major Anderson will state the time at which, as indicated by him, he will evacuate, and agree that in the meantime he will not use his guns against us, unless ours should be employed against Fort Sumter, you are thus to avoid the effusion of blood." "If this or its equivalent be refused, reduce the fort as your judgment deems to be most practicable." This was in substance communicated to Major Anderson, who replied, that unless he had orders from his Government or supplies he would evacuate by noon on the 15th inst. To this the "aids" answered, that fire would be opened upon Sumter in one hour from that time; the surrender was not wanted, except by inaugurating war,—thus "to fire the Southern Heart."

Promptly at the time indicated, April 12th, 4.20 A.M., a mortar on Sullivan Island gave the signal. This was followed by one gun from each of five batteries and a floating iron-clad. After a pause of a few moments fifty guns in concert threw forth their solid shot and shell upon the devoted Sumter and its garrison of seventy men. No reply was made; the men were ordered out of danger; at six o'clock breakfast was served; the men were then detailed under their respective officers, with the intention

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1861.

Apr.  
8.Apr.  
11.Apr.  
12.  
2.30  
P. M.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1861.

of relieving each other from time to time. The first detail, under Captain Arthur Doubleday, fired the first gun at 7 A.M., then for nearly three hours solid shot had been pouring in, and shells were bursting every minute within the inclosure. The parapet guns, after a few rounds, were left, as the exposure was too great to man them. The men of the second and third details or reliefs refused to wait their turns, but insisted on joining in the fight; and so vigorous were the discharges from Sumter that the enemy thought the fort must have been reinforced. All were inspired with patriotic zeal; even some Irish laborers joined in with their native ardor for a fight. Presently one of the officers heard the report of a gun on the parapet; going to see, he found a company of the laborers amusing themselves in that exposed place by firing at the enemy. One of them exclaimed with great glee that he had hit the floating battery in the center. The soldiers characterized them as the "Irish Irregulars." During Friday night the mortar batteries kept up their fire to prevent the garrison making repairs, and at dawn all the guns opened. Now were fired red-hot balls, which set the barracks on fire, blew up one magazine and endangered another, so that to avoid further danger ninety barrels of powder were rolled into the sea. The heat and smoke became stifling, yet the brave fellows fought on breathing through wet cloths. For thirty-four hours had the bombardment lasted, when a boat was seen approaching from Fort Moultrie bearing a white flag. Negotiations began, and Anderson agreed to evacuate the fort. The troops were transferred to the *Baltic* steamer, which brought them to New York. No one of the Union soldiers nor of the enemy was killed in the conflict. Major Anderson from on board the steamer sent his report to Washington. After describing the ruin of the fort, he says in conclusion: "The troops marched out with colors flying and drums beating, bringing away company and private property, and saluting their flag with fifty guns."

Apr.  
14.

The firing on Fort Sumter fired the Northern heart. The insult to the flag and the nation had marvelous effect upon the minds of the people. By this act the secessionists had alienated more or less their most influential friends in the non-slaveholding States; could they have foretold the outburst of mingled sorrow and indignation that arose from all classes of persons, they would never have fired upon Fort Sumter without provocation. The hitherto sympathizers with the demands of the slave owners now, with but comparatively few exceptions, were as outspoken in condemnation of the act as those who had for years opposed those demands.

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

There was an indescribable feeling of emotion pervading the minds of all; one impulse seemed to move millions as one man; a quiet determination of purpose took possession of the people more powerful than if it had been demonstrative. The news of the attack and surrender had been sent to wherever the telegraph extended, and on the day—the Sabbath—the solemnity of the worshipers was deep and all-absorbing. Earnest prayers went up from the pulpits and were earnestly responded to from the congregations, for the Nation and for direction in this momentous crisis. This single act in a few short hours had made rival political partisans a band of brothers; prejudices melted away before the heat of an overwhelming love of country, as if they had never reflected upon its blessings, until the attempt was made to destroy its unity.

On Monday morning came the President's proclamation calling for 75,000 men to serve for three months to enforce the laws which had been opposed "and their execution obstructed in the States of South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Florida, Mississippi, Louisiana and Texas."

Apr.  
15.

An appeal was made to all loyal citizens to maintain the honor, the integrity, and the existence of the National Union. Responses to this appeal came at once from the loyal States; volunteers were offered by thousands; especially prompt were the States of Pennsylvania, Massachu-

CHAP. LVIII.  
1861. setts, New York and Ohio. These anticipating this state of affairs had by legislative enactment placed their militia in a condition for prompt action.

From the governors of the slave States—Kentucky, Missouri, Virginia, North Carolina, Tennessee and Arkansas—came responses within a few days, all refusing to send their quotas of men, Virginia, North Carolina and Tennessee threatening to resist any attempt at “coercion” on the part of the National Government. This was more the sentiment of the individual governors of these States than of the majority of the people, as it was afterward shown. Every governor of the Border States was in favor of the secessionists except Governor Hicks, of Maryland. So deeply was the plot laid that at first the National authorities were taken at great disadvantage, the usual case with such events; the Confederates were prepared and therefore at first successful.

Never before in the free States was there such an exhibition of love of country. The people were intelligent and familiar with the merits of the question at issue—union or disunion—and acted accordingly. The flag—the symbol of a united Nation—became almost an idol; it floated from church steeples, from public buildings, from private houses, from mast heads; it decorated the shops and offices along the streets; the drayman put it on his horse and the engineer on his locomotive, while its beautiful colors were blended in rosettes and ribbons worn by matrons and maidens—all these manifestations told that the hearts of the people were with the government.

Pennsylvania, being the nearest, was the first to place men in Washington; six hundred of whom arrived there in four days after the call was issued. Massachusetts was really the first in the field in respect to readiness; her men were finely drilled and armed, and within twenty-four hours after the telegram brought the call for troops nearly every company of the four regiments called for was in Boston

ready to march. The men left their workshops, stores and farms at a minute's warning.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1861.

Benjamin F. Butler was commissioned Brigadier-General of Volunteers, and ordered to Washington with two regiments, the Sixth and Eighth; the Third and Fourth were sent by sea in steamers to Fortress Monroe, thus securing that important place to the nation. The Sixth, in passing through Baltimore, was attacked by a mob in the interest of secession, and three of the men were killed—the first blood shed in the great civil war. This was the anniversary of the battle of Lexington, April 19th, 1775, and the nation entered upon a second struggle as a prelude to a still greater career of humane and industrial progress, to a higher plane of a Christianized civilization. It took eight years of war to establish our independence, and it took four years of war to make us a united people, in the course of which was removed the greatest drawback to the whole nation's progress.

Apr.  
19.

The spirit of loyalty in the free States continued to furnish men and means to sustain the cause. In less than a month more than \$23,000,000 were given as a free offering to the Government, and volunteers far beyond the number called for.

Lieutenant Jones, in command at Harper's Ferry, learned that a force of about 2,000 Virginians were on their way to pillage the armory. As he had but fifty men, he prudently destroyed all the war material, blew up the magazine and withdrew to Carlisle, Pa. The following day the U. S. Navy-yard at Gosport, near Norfolk, was destroyed. Satisfactory reasons for this wanton destruction of property, amounting to many millions' worth, have never been given. The yard could have been defended with prompt action. About 2,000 cannon were thus furnished the disunionists, which they used during the whole war.

Apr.  
19.

Threats were frequently made by newspapers and public men in the interest of the slave States that Washington would soon be in the hands of the insurgents. Their

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1861.

May  
6-23.June  
11.

authorities made the most strenuous exertions to increase and organize an army. Jefferson Davis first called for 22,000 men, and soon again for 20,000 more. Their Congress met in called session, and resolved to remove their seat of government from Montgomery to Richmond, intending, no doubt, to "coerce" Virginia to pass an ordinance of secession, which the majority of the people of the State in an impartial vote would evidently oppose. Virginia's self-constituted authorities handed her over, and she was graciously received into the Confederacy by this Congress, just assembled at Richmond. But the people were promised the privilege of voting on this illegal ordinance of secession on the 23d instant; however, before that day came, all persons expressing Union sentiments were either driven out of the eastern portion of the State or compelled to hold their peace. Even the Mayor of Richmond, by proclamation, enjoined the people to inform him of any persons *suspected* of being Union in their sympathies (and Northern female teachers were advised by one of the newspapers not to talk). The election by the people was a farce.

The portion of the State west of the Blue Ridge was almost free of slaves and could not be "dragooned" into secession; the people there understood the question, and did not choose to fight in the cause, hence they refused to answer the call for troops by Governor Letcher for the Southern confederacy; they also took measures to become separate from the Eastern portion, and in a short time formed a new State known as West Virginia, which as such in due time was admitted into the Union. The national government threw a protecting force into the new State under General George B. McClellan, and speedily West Virginia was as free from armed secessionists as old Virginia of Unionists.

In Tennessee the people's vote was disregarded, though by a majority of 50,000 they had decided against secession, yet the legislature led by Isham G. Harris, the governor, in secret session adopted the Constitution of the Confederate

States: Upon this act the people were invited to vote on the 8th of the next month. Meantime, as customary, a series of outrages were perpetrated on the Union men, to prevent their voting against the usurpation. Arkansas also by resolution of a Convention declared herself out of the Union. The Convention proceeded to pass laws by which all moneys due Northern creditors were to be paid into the treasury of the State.

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

May  
6.

The governor of Missouri—Claiborne F. Jackson—was a secessionist, and refused to furnish troops in response to President Lincoln's requisition. But the people themselves, under the leadership of Frank P. Blair and B. Gratz Brown, raised in two months nearly 10,000 men. Captain Nathaniel Lyon, in command at St. Louis, suddenly surrounded a Confederate camp—Fort Jackson—and captured every man. These had assembled under the pretence of preserving the peace of the State, and had been drilling for weeks; their arms having been secretly sent them from Baton Rouge, Louisiana, whence they had been taken from the United States Arsenal. Previous to this, the energetic Captain Lyon, under orders from Washington, had transferred the arms and war material from the arsenal at St. Louis to Springfield, Illinois. The German element in the population of St. Louis stood bravely for the Union in this crisis.

Kentucky hesitated. She wanted to be neutral, but that policy was soon seen to be impossible. Under the influence of John C. Breckenridge, her young men were, for the most part, in favor of aiding the seceded States. Mass meetings were, however, held in different places, and the most influential men of middle life and upward came out in favor of the Union. Kentucky was only saved by the presence of nearly 20,000 volunteers from the free States over the Ohio river; in truth Maryland and Missouri were also saved to the Union by their nearness to the free States.

From the frequent reconnoissances and surveys made by the Confederates it was evident they intended to fortify the

**CHAP.** heights of Arlington, of Georgetown and Alexandria, across  
**LVIII.** the river from Washington; they had already occupied  
**1861.** many points on the upper Potomac, ready to pass over into Maryland. The disunion leaders in the Cotton States had sent several thousand soldiers to this army now threatening the National Capital. These leaders had determined, as some of their papers indiscreetly stated, to make the border States, especially Virginia, the battle ground. They were willing to plunge the nation into war, but were anxious to have others suffer the consequences. Howell Cobb, the recent Secretary of the Treasury under Buchanan, said in a speech: "The people of the Gulf States need have no apprehension; they might go on with their planting and their other business as usual; the war would not come to their section; its theater would be along the borders of the Ohio river and in Virginia." In truth the Old Dominion was sadly desolated; for four years, over her soil army after army passed and repassed. The devastation was inaugurated by the Confederates themselves, lest any sustenance or shelter should be found for the Union soldiers.

General Scott anticipated the movements of the enemy by sending 10,000 troops in three divisions at 2 A. M. to seize the heights and fortify them. The Orange and Manassas railroad was seized, and on it a train having on board 300 Confederate soldiers, who were captured. Alex-  
**May** andria was also occupied. In this town over the "Marshall  
**24.** House" had floated for weeks a Confederate flag, which could be seen from the President's mansion, and to which it was given out the flag was designed as a taunt. Colonel Elmer Ellsworth, of the Zouaves, seeing the flag floating, determined to get possession of it. He ascended to the roof, pulled down the flag, and when descending was shot and instantly killed by the proprietor of the house, who a moment after was shot dead by a private soldier who had accompanied the Colonel. The death of young Ellsworth was felt throughout the land, as he possessed remarkable qualities as a commander and disciplinarian.

General Irwin McDowell, in command of the Union forces, issued a proclamation in which he enjoined all the officers to make "statements of the amount, kind and value of all private property taken or used for government purposes, and the damage done in any way to private property, that justice may be done alike to private citizens and government." This is given to show the conciliatory spirit of the National Government; these regulations were enforced. Beauregard, in command of the Confederates, a few days later issued a counter-proclamation to the Virginia people in which he said: "A reckless and unprincipled tyrant has invaded your soil. Abraham Lincoln, regardless of all moral, legal and constitutional restraints, has thrown his Abolition hosts among you, who are murdering and impressing your citizens, confiscating and destroying your property, and committing other acts of violence and outrage too shocking and revolting to humanity to be enumerated." It is due to the truth of history that these facts should be noticed, as it was by such gross misrepresentations the mass of the people of the South were deceived before and during the war.

The Secretary of State, Mr. Seward, announced to our ministers abroad the policy of the Government in relation to foreign intervention. To Charles Francis Adams, at the British Court, he wrote: "You will make no admissions of weakness in our Constitution, or any apprehensions on the part of the Government." "You will in no case listen to any suggestions of compromises by this Government under foreign auspices with its discontented citizens." To Mr. Dayton, Minister to France, he said: "The President neither expects nor desires any intervention, nor even any favor, from the government of France or any other in the emergency." "If several European States should combine in that intervention, the President and the people of the United States deem the Union, which would then be at stake, worth all the cost and all the sacrifice of a contest

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

May  
11.

CHAP. with all the world in arms if such a contest should prove  
LVIII. inevitable."

1861.

May  
21.

In respect to the blockade the Secretary wrote to Mr. Adams: "You say that by our own laws, and the laws of nations, this Government has a clear right to suppress insurrection. An exclusion of commerce from National ports, which have been seized by insurgents in the equitable form of blockade, is a proper means to that end. You will not insist that our blockade is to be respected if it is not maintained by a competent force; you will add that the blockade is now, and it will continue to be so maintained, and therefore we expect it to be respected by Great Britain."

The astonishment of the American people at the position taken by England almost equaled their indignation. For many years invectives without number were thrown upon them, especially those of the free States, by influential persons in England, because they did not take political measures to abolish slavery, and thus violate the compromises of the Constitution made in other days, when the moral, political and economical evils of the system were not so well known.

But now, when the slave States had entered upon a war to protect and extend slavery, they had, with few exceptions, the full sympathy of the ruling class of England. Swift sailing vessels and steamers, with little hindrance on the part of the government, were fitted out from her ports laden with munitions of war to aid the Confederacy. The Queen, or rather the government, issued a proclamation of professed neutrality, putting the Confederates on the same footing as the United States Government. The cotton manufacturers and the iron interests, representing many millions of money, and employing several hundred thousand operatives, were in favor of recognizing the Confederacy. The former of these were nearly ruined by the want of cotton, which was cut off by the blockade, and the latter by the loss of the American market, as the tariffs

imposed to meet the extraordinary expenses incurred by the civil war had also given the American iron-masters reasons to extend their works, and they soon were able to supply the wants of the country.

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

General B. F. Butler was transferred from Baltimore to Fortress Monroe. The Confederates, under General Magruder, occupied prominent points commanding the approaches to Richmond, while Yorktown and Gloucester Point were also fortified. General Butler resolved, by a night movement, to surprise and capture two positions of the enemy in the vicinity—Little Bethel and Big Bethel. The latter the stronger, and under the immediate command of Magruder. The plan was well arranged, and the troops set out on their night march, in order to attack Little Bethel at daylight. But two of the regiments came into collision, by some mistake made in the darkness, and fired into each other till the mistake was discovered. This firing gave information to the enemy, and those in Little Bethel hastily retreated to the larger and better fortified position. Meantime, the other portion of the Federal troops hearing the firing, fell back, lest they should be taken in flank. In the morning the disappointed Federals came together; a conference was held, and it was rashly determined to attack Big Bethel, whose guns commanded the approach. The result was a repulse, as might have been expected, yet the soldiers, some of whom had only been under arms a few weeks, stood the fire well. Here fell two of the most accomplished men in the command—Lieutenant Greble, of the United States Artillery, and Theodore Winthrop, secretary and aid to General Butler.

May  
10.

June  
11.

An election held in West Virginia shows that the great majority of the people of that section were true and loyal to the National Government. A few days afterward a force was thrown across the Ohio at several points. This force made short work with the armed enemy of West Virginia; driving out both them and the troops sent to their aid by the Confederacy.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1861.

May  
26.June  
11.June  
12.

General McClellan opened the campaign by issuing a proclamation, in which was promised protection to the lives and property of the Union men from the armed enemy who were preying upon them. Grafton, an important point at the junction of the Baltimore and Ohio Railway with that of Northwest Virginia, was occupied by the enemy, who, hearing of the advance, evacuated that place, after destroying, as far as possible, culverts and railway bridges. The next place was Philippi, where the enemy were routed and scattered in a spirited fight, they leaving all their munitions; they, however, made a strenuous but unsuccessful attempt to recover their lost ground. A great deal of leniency was shown to the disunion portion of the inhabitants, which policy they but little appreciated. A Confederate force was concentrated at Rich Mountain; though strongly entrenched, General Rosecrans attacked them so vigorously that, under General Pegram, they retreated in the night in order to reach General Garnet's main force at Laurel Hill; but they became entangled in the woods, and food failing, six hundred of them surrendered as prisoners of war. When this was known, General Garnet rapidly retreated, throwing away his superfluous baggage. He passed along Cheat River, hoping by means of by-paths to reach the Valley of the Shenandoah. Though he impeded the pursuers by breaking down bridges and felling trees across the road, yet in spite of these obstructions the Union forces overtook him at Carrick's Ford. Garnet here made a stand to confront his indefatigable pursuers. He had taken a strong position on a hill whose base was densely covered by a jungle of laurel bushes; with him were 2,000 men, and a reserve of 3,000 men in the rear. Rosecrans made a demonstration in front at the Ford, while a portion of his men, by a flank movement, groped their way through the jungle and to the top of the hill, and with a shout rushed on the enemy, captured one of the guns commanding the Ford, and drove them before them. Garnet behaved with great bravery, but presently fell pierced by a rifle ball.

Then his men, panic-stricken, fled in confusion, and reaching the reserves in the rear, the panic was communicated to them and they also fled, only one regiment of Georgians making a short stand. These prisoners were treated with great kindness, clothed and fed, and unwisely permitted to simply take the oath of allegiance to the United States Government and then dismissed. Large numbers of these men, violating their oath, were soon found in the Confederate ranks. The Confederate loss in these conflicts was about 1,500 killed, wounded and prisoners; the Union loss was only 20 killed and 60 wounded.

General McClellan was relieved and ordered to Washington; General Rosecrans taking command of the Union forces in West Virginia.

Preparations were made for a general advance of the troops in the vicinity of Washington early in July. The troops under General Patterson on the Upper Potomac; those under McClellan—the extreme right—from West Virginia; and the forces under McDowell extending along the river opposite Washington; these all were to advance and gradually contract their lines around Richmond. The plan was General Scott's. General McDowell was to move direct upon Manassas Junction, on the railroad twenty-seven miles from Alexandria, an important strategic position held by the enemy. General Patterson had already moved from Chambersburg, Pa., and reached the Potomac and passed over, General Joe Johnston, in command of the Confederates in the Valley of the Shenandoah, falling back, after destroying what was left of the armory at Harper's Ferry and transferring the machinery to Richmond, there to be used in the Confederate service to the close of the war.

Patterson also issued his proclamation, promising protection to loyal men and private property, and the troops were enjoined to suppress any insurrection of the slaves. Ruin was found along the pathway of the retreating Confederate army; it was they who inaugurated the system of desolating the country through which they passed, nor till

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

July  
22.

June  
16.

CHAP. the next year was any retaliation practiced by the Federal  
LVIII. armies, and that but seldom.

1860.

June  
18.

Patterson had about 23,000 men, but he seemed to act without a fixed purpose or design; for some unexplained reason he recrossed the Potomac and fell back to Hagerstown, he said in consequence of orders from Washington, and the enemy returned to the south side of the river. Then again he crossed the Potomac at Williamsport, and appeared to hesitate, taking no responsibility. The campaign seemed aimless. The enemy now fell back beyond

July  
2.

Martinsburg toward Winchester, where Johnston was said to have an army of 15,000 men well supplied with artillery. Patterson occupied Martinsburg. His orders were to press Johnston and prevent his reinforcing Beauregard at Manassas; but he hesitated, and soon it was discovered that Johnston and his whole army had marched southward, yet he lingered till he heard of the disaster at Bull Run. The Government should have put in command of these troops a regularly educated military officer, and not have risked so much by entrusting them to incompetent hands.

July  
20.

Meantime the Union troops were moving toward Manassas Junction, the enemy making but little resistance and falling back till they made a stand at Blackburn's Ford at Bull Run Creek, which they strongly fortified. McDowell resolved to turn the enemy's position and reach the Manassas Gap Railway, and thus intercept reinforcements from Winchester, as he fully expected Patterson to hold Johnston in check so that he could not bring aid to Beauregard.

McDowell made his arrangements to flank the enemy by crossing the creek at other fords. Parties sent out to reconnoitre on Saturday reported they had heard steam-whistles and the distant rumblings of railroad trains. It was learned after the battle that these trains had brought a portion of Johnston's forces.

July  
21.

The various divisions of the Union army, but not in perfect concert, advanced to cross the fords. Owing to

want of discipline some of these divisions were behind the time appointed—daylight—to cross the fords nearly three hours. Of this want of concert the enemy availed themselves. They soon discovered the attack in front was a feint, and from that point they withdrew large detachments to be used elsewhere. The contest was a brave one on both sides, but desultory in the extreme, as might be expected from inexperienced men, nine-tenths of whom were going into battle for the first time. In different parts of the field the Confederates were driven from time to time and would recover; batteries of cannon changed hands more than once. Finally the Federals drove the enemy nearly two miles, and deemed the victory won. The Union troops had been in motion from 2 A.M., and had been fighting from ten o'clock, and at 3 P.M., were resting when they were surprised and suddenly attacked by about 5,000 troops fresh from a train from Winchester. At this crisis the other Confederates, thus encouraged, renewed the conflict with vigor. The Union forces were thrown into confusion and retreated in disorder, and being undisciplined could not be as a whole effectually rallied. Yet individual regiments one after another stood in the way and fought gallantly, retarding the advance of the enemy till the stragglers could retire to the rear. While the soldiers of both armies were inexperienced and but partially disciplined, they fought worthy of their fathers. The Union forces lost 481 killed and 1,011 wounded, the Confederates 296 killed and 1,533 wounded. This success of the Confederates made known to the people of the free States that the Civil War could only be terminated by hard fighting. "Beauregard's victory at Manassas Junction inspired the Confederates with such confidence that they had not doubted for a single instant but that the North had received a mortal blow." "But a few men, such as General Lee and General Joe Johnston and others, alone recognized the vital importance of the struggle in which they were engaged, and they

CHAP. ceased not to warn the Southern people against their foolish  
LVIII. imprudence.<sup>1</sup>

1861.

June

13.

Missouri being a Border State, the people were much divided, but the majority were in favor of the union, especially might this be said of the entire German population. Governor Jackson had fled from the capital at Jefferson City after issuing a flaming proclamation calling for 50,000 men to repel the invaders, meaning the U. S. troops under Captain Lyon. The Governor had slipped off up the river with steamers laden with the State ordnance. The energetic Lyon went in pursuit in steamers the same evening, and sent troops by land in the same direction to seize railroads and protect bridges and to intercept the fugitive governor and his adherents, the main body moving to Rolla, the then terminus of the South Pacific railway.

Lyon first stopped at the capital and installed a Military Governor, Colonel Boernstein, then with three steamers, on board of which were troops and field artillery, he continued the pursuit, landing near Booneville, a few miles below where Jackson and Sterling Price, a former governor of the State, had made an entrenched camp, and had a motley crowd, composed largely of the *outside voters* we have seen in the Kansas difficulties. After landing Lyon marched at once to assault the camp, but met the enemy on their way to oppose his landing; he immediately attacked them and after a few minutes they fled, taking refuge in their camp; this they also soon abandoned, scattering in all directions. About 40 of them were killed and great numbers made prisoners. Jackson and Price both fled toward the South, where they expected to join troops from Arkansas and Texas under General Rains and the famous Texan ranger, Ben McCullough.

June

17.

Lyon was sadly in want of reinforcements, but as all the troops were at that time sent to protect Washington, he was compelled to pursue the enemy with insufficient force.

<sup>1</sup> Childe's Life of Lee, p. 60.

He sent forward Colonel Franz Sigel, who soon arrived at Springfield, in the south-western portion of the State; thence he advanced rapidly toward Carthage, to find all the Confederates united under Jackson, Price, and other chiefs. Though the enemy numbered 5,500 and a battery of five guns, and Sigel's force only 1,500 men and eight guns, two of which were twelve pounders, yet he did not hesitate to attack. He found them drawn upon a rising ground on the prairie; that morning they expected, as they expressed it, "to wipe out the Dutch hirelings." The battle commenced and the centre guns of the enemy were soon silenced, and they lowered the Confederate flag and raised that of the State; upon this Sigel's men were unwilling to fire. Then the Confederate cavalry, being very numerous, began to outflank the Unionists and Sigel fell back to protect his train. He held the enemy in check, pouring in at the proper moment "a shower of canister and shrapnel shell" until he reached Springfield, in spite of the numerous force around him. Next day the Confederates were reinforced by about 5,000 Texans under Ben McCullough. Five days after the battle General Lyon arrived at Springfield, which place the enemy almost surrounded.

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

The Missouri State Convention, largely composed of Union men, took action by electing provisional State officers. The people of the State respected the authority of the convention.

July  
20.

General Lyon ascertained that the enemy, 23,000 strong, were concentrating at Wilson's Creek ten miles south of Springfield, and were preparing some onward movement. He resolved to anticipate them. The entire Federal force marched from their entrenchments at Springfield in two divisions—the one under Lyon, the other under Sigel—to surprise the enemy before they made their advance. Lyon was to attack the front at daylight, and Sigel the rear at the same time. Both were prompt, and one of the fiercest battles thus far began; in front the enemy were driven from the field. Lyon greatly exposed himself and was wounded

Aug  
9-10

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

twice. The enemy rallied and made a desperate effort to regain what they had lost but were most severely repulsed by the cool determination of the Iowans, who lying close on the brow of a hill let their foe come within 40 feet before firing upon them. They recoiled in confusion and finally fell back down the hill. It was seen that they were about to make another attempt, and Lyon desired his men to charge bayonets as soon as they had discharged their pieces. "Who will lead us?" exclaimed the men. "I will myself," said the general. "Come on, my brave men." The enemy came up but only fired and did not wait for the bayonet charge but fled down the hill. General Lyon was killed by this discharge. He was universally regretted, being one of the most accomplished officers in the United States Army. Meantime General Sigel was also successful in driving the enemy before him, but was at length greatly outnumbered by encountering a large force in his front and compelled to retreat, losing five cannons, three of which the soldiers spiked. This was a drawn battle. The Union army lost 263 killed, 721 wounded; the Confederate, 421 killed and more than a thousand wounded. The Union army under Major Sturgis fell back to Springfield, and finally to Rolla, the terminus of the railway, holding the enemy at bay, who now overran Southern Missouri, driving the Union men from their homes and pillaging the people generally. General J. C. Fremont assumed command in Missouri about the last of July.

Oct.  
16.

The Confederates pushed their line of devastation up to Lexington on the Missouri. This place was defended in the most heroic manner by Colonel Mulligan and his "Irish Brigade"—of 2,640 men,—but finally, when the enemy increased to nearly 20,000, he surrendered. This was but a barren victory, as the enemy were compelled to retreat rapidly toward the south, pursued by Fremont, who, after commencing the fortification of St. Louis, and organizing the forces already in the State and those collected at his call from other States, had taken the field (Sept. 26, himself.

Fremont was crippled for want of transportation, arms, clothing, and men. Yet, at a critical moment came to him an order from the Secretary of War and General Scott "to send 5,000 well-armed infantry to Washington without a moment's delay." Fremont, too, had issued a proclamation, in which he had declared the State under martial law; threatening, among the penalties, the freedom of the Confederate slaves. The latter clause offended those of the Union men who owned slaves, and at the suggestion of President Lincoln he modified that clause to read, "all slaves who have been employed on rebel military works." But it raised a clamor among the politicians that did not cease till Fremont was superseded, when General Halleck assumed command of the "Department of the West."

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

Nov.  
12.

Fremont's career at the West was brief—only one hundred days; but, being a man of military instincts and training, he showed in that time a sagacity which was not allowed fair practical development. In that brief time he was the first to suggest and inaugurate the following practices, then widely decried, but without which the war would not have been successfully concluded: the free use of cavalry (strongly opposed by General Scott and others); exchange of prisoners with the enemy; fortification of large cities, to allow armies to take the field; building of river gun-boats for interior operations at the West; and, the emancipation of the slaves. In short, he contributed more than is generally credited to him.

Sept.  
10.

After the Union disaster at Bull Run the Confederates endeavored to regain West Virginia; sending a large force under Henry A. Wise and John B. Floyd. The latter was defeated by Rosecrans at Carnifex Ferry on Gauley River, but under favor of darkness fled, his men leaving all their munitions except what they could carry. General Robert E. Lee was sent with 9,000 men to drive the Federals from Cheat Mountain, but after several conflicts he was defeated and compelled to retreat east.

Sept.  
4.

Kentucky in a recent election for Members of Congress

CHAP. had shown herself loyal by a majority of 55,000; though  
LVIII. her Governor, MacGoffin, was a secessionist, and so was

1861. General Buckner, the commander of the State Guards.

July

1. The latter, treacherously betraying his trust, went over to the support of the Confederacy. John C. Breckenridge, who was in the United States Senate, and so much exercised because President Lincoln, as he argued, had violated the Constitution in calling out the 75,000 men to enforce the laws, threw all his influence in favor of the enemy, thus more than usual corrupting the loyalty of the young men of the State.

Sept.  
8.

The Legislature met and passed laws over the Governor's veto to furnish money to arm the State against invasion on either side, and preserve her neutrality; that phantom soon vanished. A hostile force advanced from Tennessee, and taking possession fortified two points on the Ohio river—Hickman and Chalk Bluffs. On the same day General Zollicoffer, with an army occupied Cumberland Gap, in the eastern part of the State, intending thereby to cut off the Union men of East Tennessee from aid either from Kentucky or the Federal army. This concerted movement made it plain to the most obtuse that the Confederates, as had been their selfish plan, were, in order to save the "Cotton States," about to make the Border States the battle-field.

General U. S. Grant, who was in command at Cairo, Ill., at the mouth of the Ohio, immediately telegraphed news of the Confederate invasion to the Kentucky Legislature, then in session. That body at once passed a resolution inviting General Robert Anderson, of Sumter memory, to enter upon his duties in the "Department of Kentucky," to which he had been assigned by President Lincoln. Thus far there were no United States troops stationed in the State, and the only soldiers were enlisted Kentuckians.

Sept.  
6.

Grant did not wait for orders, but at once passed over into Kentucky, landing at Paducah; issuing a proclamation, as was the custom in those days, to the effect that he

had come to protect the people and aid them in driving the hostile invaders from the State.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1861.

General Anderson assumed command, and the Legislature called out "for defense against the invaders" 40,000 men, and by law disfranchised those Kentuckians who had voluntarily joined the enemy if they did not return to their allegiance to the State. The neutrality of Kentucky was at an end.

Sept.  
20.

The disaster at Bull Run rendered the people of the free States intensely anxious; fears were entertained of a rapid advance on Washington itself. That such an advance was not made is due to the opposition of Jefferson Davis, who thought the measure premature. At this crisis the terms of the first men called out were about to expire, and now a call was made for men to serve three years. The new rousing of the patriotism of the loyal North was sublime: regiments came into existence as if raised by magic; even sympathizers with the Confederacy cowered before the enthusiasm and determination evoked to repel the Southern advance; yet they continued to the end to disparage every loyal victory and exaggerate every defeat.

Congress was equal to the emergency; they passed a bill authorising the enlisting of 500,000 men and appropriated 500,000,000 dollars, to carry on the war. They also passed an act confiscating all slaves used by the South for military purposes; all slaves within the Federal lines were to be employed upon the works and paid as day laborers. General Butler had applied the term "Contraband of war" to the slaves escaping from their masters to his army at Fortress Monroe; although orders had been issued that such runaways should be restored, he delayed to comply with the order. Great care was taken by the National Government to conciliate the slave owners, but without success.

Aug.  
2.

Gen. McClellan entered upon his duties with commendable zeal; Washington was fortified thoroughly, there being no less than *thirty-two* forts constructed at different points

Aug.  
1.

CHAP. and garrisoned. But his great work was to bring order out  
 LVIII. of disorder, to discipline the numerous new soldiers that  
 1861. had crowded by steamboat and railway to the capital.  
 Oct. This great work he was fully competent to perform, and it  
 15. was as fully accomplished. By the middle of October he  
 had 150,000 men under his immediate command. No  
 advances were made, except reconnoitering expeditions to  
 ascertain the positions of the enemy and their designs.

Oct. The Confederates, under General Evans, made a feint  
 21. of evacuating Leesburg, in order to draw some one of these  
 reconnoitering parties into an ambuscade. General Stone  
 was in command in that vicinity. He ordered Colonel  
 Baker to cross the Potomac and try the enemy, for it was  
 well known that Leesburg was well fortified. The crossing  
 was made, but the enemy remained quiet until the Federals  
 were within their power. Then occurred a terrific battle  
 and slaughter, compared with the numbers engaged—and  
 Ball's Bluff disaster is the saddest of the war. General  
 Stone sent an order to Colonel Baker warning him of  
 danger, as the enemy were reported to be in strong force.  
 This order was given to Baker on the battle-field, who  
 asked the bearer what it was. The answer was, "All right,  
 go ahead." Colonel Baker put the order in his hat without  
 reading it, and went "ahead" straight into the trap laid  
 for him by the cunning enemy. After the battle the order  
 was found in the colonel's hat, stained with his own blood.

Oct. Lieutenant-General Scott asked to be placed on the  
 21. retired list, on account of his age and infirmities. This  
 request was granted. The President and his Cabinet going  
 to the general's quarters to respectfully bid him farewell as  
 commander-in-chief of the armies of the Republic. General  
 McClellan was appointed to succeed him, and he at once  
 assumed command.

A combined naval and land expedition was planned at  
 Fortress Monroe, where the veteran General Wool was now  
 in command—Butler having been relieved and ordered to  
 active duty. A fleet of three frigates, fifty guns each, and

four vessels of smaller size, besides transports and tug-boats to carry the land force. No person knew the destination, except a few of the officers, till the expedition was fully out at sea. The fleet was under Commodore Stringham, and the land forces under General Butler. The object was to capture and hold the two forts—Hatteras and Clark—at the entrance of Pamlico and Albemarle Sounds, in order to break up the contraband trade by which English blockade runners supplied the Confederacy with munitions of war, in exchange for tar, turpentine and cotton.

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

Fort Hatteras was a very strong battery, nearly surrounded by water; Fort Clark, 700 yards distant, was not as strong. Almost on their arrival the frigates opened on the forts, while the transports landed their men some four miles distant. Hatteras replied with spirit, but wildly, and the Union frigates poured in their solid shot and shell, literally tearing the fort to pieces. Toward evening a storm arose and the vessels were forced to withdraw to the offing; in the morning the weather was clear and the frigates opened again upon Fort Hatteras. Meantime, the land forces occupied Fort Clark, which the enemy had abandoned. At 11 A.M., a white flag was run up on Fort Hatteras; both forts were unconditionally surrendered. More than 600 prisoners were taken, while not a Union soldier was injured. For a number of days the men amused themselves in capturing English blockade runners, who, not having learned of the capture, entered the inlet as usual. The blockade was enforced as much as possible along the coast, with its multitude of inlets and harbors, some of which had one or two entrances.

Aug.  
29.

Two months later a similar expedition set out from Fortress Monroe. Commodore Dupont commanded the navy, and General Thomas W. Sherman the land forces. This expedition consisted of seventy-seven vessels, of all classes—steamers and sailers, steam-tugs, and ocean steamers as transports, and fifteen gunboats and one steam frigate, the *Wabash*. Among the great ocean steamers was

CHAP. LVIII. the *Vanderbilt*, afterward presented to the Government by Cornelius Vanderbilt. These vessels were nearly all volunteers—the ship-owners were not behind in their sacrifices for the cause. The whole expedition moved from Fortress Monroe; its destination was not generally known till it arrived off Port Royal, South Carolina, the finest harbor on the South Atlantic coast. After some unavoidable delays the gunboats and the *Wabash* were ready for the bombardment of the forts on each side of the channel. The vessels moved in an ellipse. As they passed up the stream they poured in a deadly fire of solid shot and shell on the forts on one side of the channel, then as they returned paid their respects to the forts on the other side; the most prominent, Hilton Head, was deemed invulnerable. The vessels thus moving passed in and out of the range of the rebel guns. The *Wabash* came within six hundred yards of Hilton Head, while the gunboats of smaller draft came close in shore and enfiladed the enemy's works. The Confederates could not stand the storm, but leaving everything fled to the woods. The bombardment lasted four hours. The Federals captured about forty pieces of ordnance, mostly of the heaviest caliber and of the most approved patterns, and an immense quantity of ammunition. The village of Beaufort was occupied. It was made the hospital headquarters during the war for that section, and a resting-place for the sick soldiers, weakened so much by the debilitating influence of the climate. After the capture of Hilton Head and the adjacent islands the enemy began to burn the cotton, lest it should fall into the hands of the Union soldiers. The whole heavens were lighted up night after night by the raging fires.

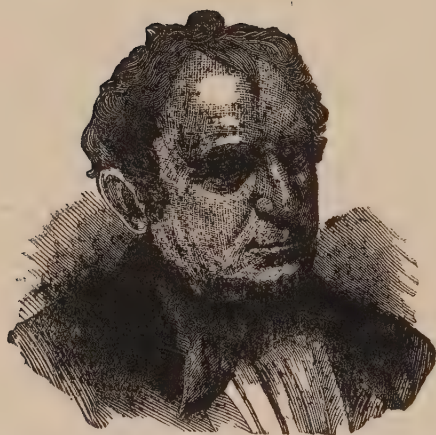
The unanimity with which the people of the free States responded to the calls of the Government, both for men and money, was truly marvelous. From April 15, 1861, when Mr. Lincoln's proclamation was issued, to August 15th, more than 500,000 volunteers had answered to these calls. Of these 375,000 were actually in the field. The

1861.  
O. t.  
29.

Nov.  
7.

Government, from the first, determined to depend upon the people themselves, not only for soldiers, but for the means to defray the expenses of the war. In strictness there was not a *mercenary* in the Union armies; there were those of foreign birth, but they were either citizens by adoption and oath of allegiance, or had declared, according to law, their intention to become citizens; they received pay for their services, which was just and proper. When the call for money was made, the banks of the principal cities immediately loaned the government fifty million dollars. Then the appeal was made to the people at large, who could subscribe in small sums according to their ability. The rapidity with which this loan was taken proved the earnest loyalty as well as the intelligence of the people of the free States. The interest on this loan was at the rate of seven and three-tenths per cent., or two cents a day on \$100. To raise more revenue a heavy tariff was imposed on foreign merchandise and manufactures. The result was great development in the manufacturing industries of the land, and an abundance of employment given to those of moderate means, whose only capital was their skill and hands. Never before did they move so energetically in their industrial pursuits.

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
—  
1861.



J. Fenimore Cooper

## CHAPTER LVIII

### LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION.

Capture of Mason and Slidell, the Confederate Envoys to Great Britain and France.—Amicable Settlement of Controversy with Great Britain.—Preparations for War in Canada.—Battle of Belmont.—Confederate Strategy at Cumberland Gap.—Battle of Mill Spring.—Special Message from Jefferson Davis.—Cameron Favors Emancipation of Slaves.—Movement of Union Army.—Stanton Succeeds Cameron as Secretary of War.—Grant's Campaign on the Tennessee and Cumberland.—Capture of Forts Henry and Donelson.—Details of the Engagements.—Confederates Evacuate Bowling Green and Columbus.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

ON a dark and stormy night one of the English blockade runners, the steamer *Theodora*, slipped out of Charleston harbor, having on board John M. Mason of Virginia, author of the fugitive slave law of 1850, and John Slidell, of Louisiana, as special envoys to Great Britain and France. They were landed at Cardenas, Cuba; thence made their way to Havana, where they went aboard the English mail steamer *Trent*. Captain Charles Wilkes of the United States steam sloop of war *San Jacinto*, and who, when a lieutenant, had commanded a voyage of scientific discovery round the world, overhauled the *Trent* and demanded the envoys, who were delivered up to him. Captain Wilkes called at Fortress Monroe, sent his dispatches to Washington, and then steamed for New York, where he received orders to send the envoys to Fort Warren, in Boston harbor, at which

CHAP. place they were delivered. The news of this capture caused  
LVIII. unprecedented excitement throughout the land. The people,  
1861. with the greatest enthusiasm, approved the action of Captain Wilkes. But the absorbing question arose, what will be the result? Captain Wilkes justified himself, showing his authority from writers on international law, but more from English precedent. It was well known that our war with England in 1812 arose in part from the fact that English cruisers assumed the right to board neutral ships on the high seas and search them for articles contraband of war. Wilkes deemed the envoys contraband. The United States Government had always denied the right, and fought to maintain its opposite. The British Government, in courteous terms, due to the influence of Queen Victoria and Prince Albert, who both sympathized with the North in the Civil War, demanded the release of the envoys. They were returned more in accordance with the American idea that it was wrong to seize neutral vessels on the high seas than from precedent derived from British custom. Indeed before the demand came the matter had been amicably arranged between Lord Lyons, the British Minister, and Mr. Seward, the Secretary of State. As Captain Wilkes, who was on his return from a three years' cruise, had arrested these men without orders, the act was disavowed, and no cause of war remained. Meantime great excitement prevailed in England. War preparations were made in great haste, and troops were sent to Canada. The disappointment of the Confederate authorities was almost unbounded. They had hoped it would lead at least to a collision with England, and perhaps to their material aid. King Cotton had already failed them, and now they were to derive no benefit from the capture of the envoys.

The enemy under Bishop Leonidas Polk, who had been made a Major-General, held a strongly fortified position at Columbus, Kentucky; on the other side of the river, at Belmont in Missouri, was a well fortified camp. General Grant, then at Cairo, resolved to break up the latter, as

from there expeditions could be easily sent into Missouri or up or down the river. With about 3,000 men aboard steamers and escorted by the gunboats Tyler and Lexington, the Union soldiers landed four miles above Belmont and at once took up their march toward the encampment. In about a mile they fell in with the enemy and drove them "foot by foot and from tree to tree back to their encampment on the river's bank, a distance of over two miles;" as they drew near, suddenly was heard firing and cheers on the rear of the enemy. The Illinoisians, under Colonel Napoleon B. Buford, had made a detour rapidly and were now closing in; a combined movement was made upon three sides of the enemy's works, which were soon in possession of the Union forces; "The rebels passing over the river bank and into their transports in quick time." The object was accomplished; Grant destroyed all the munitions and property of the camp, and then fell back to his transports. Meantime Polk had sent troops to attack the Federals on their way back but without success. Bishop Polk reported; "It was a hard fought battle lasting from half past ten A.M. to five P.M.;" he judged Grant's force to be 7,000 strong. The Federals lost 84 killed and 288 wounded; the enemy's loss was never accurately known.

The enemy had taken possession of Cumberland Gap to prevent the Unionists of East Tennessee from being aided by United States troops. The Union men of that section displayed the most heroic patriotism of any portion of the country; and the Confederate authorities thought it of the highest importance to prevent that section being occupied by Union forces, lest they should cut in twain "The Empire of the South." General William T. Sherman, who had succeeded Anderson in Kentucky, was of the same opinion, but the authorities at Washington seemed to think otherwise. If that point had been occupied in force, communication with Cincinnati and the North could have been kept open. The persecutions and outrages inflicted upon the

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.  
Nov.  
7.

CHAP. Union men were fiercer in East Tennessee than in any por-  
 LVIII. tion East of the Mississippi.

1861.

Nov.

15.

General Buell assumed command in Kentucky, and he withdrew the Union troops from the eastern portion of the State as a large Southern force was reported to be in the vicinity of Bowling Green, an important strategic point, and that their intention was to move North and capture Louisville, and a strenuous effort must be made to drive them from the State. The Union men of the State turned out nobly in aid of the cause more than 18,000 who never flinched in battle; and yet the State had furnished many thousands of misguided young men to the very army which was now invading and foraging in their native State. In the eastern portion of the State a series of skirmishes had taken place in which the enemy, often worsted, were driven from point to point, but finally they concentrated under General Zollicoffer, and made an attack on the Union forces under General Thomas at Logan's farm—this battle is known as that of Mill Spring, though that was eight miles distant.

Jan.  
17.

General Thomas had made his arrangements to attack the Confederates in their intrenchments; but they themselves had thought to attack Thomas in a similar manner. They, accordingly, left their entrenchments after dark on a Saturday night, and the next morning at seven o'clock drove in the Federal pickets. Word was speedily given that the enemy were in force, and in less than half an hour the Union soldiers were in line of battle, a detachment, meanwhile, holding the foe in check. The conflict was severe, and the lines wavered back and forth for hours. The Confederates had protected themselves by an extemporized bulwark of fence rails and a barn. Between them and the woods where the Federal soldiers were, was an open field. Colonel McCook determined to capture these defenses, and he ordered the Ninth Ohio, Germans, to fix bayonets; then moving along the front, he shouted, "My invincible Germans, charge!" A moment afterward the whole regiment was in the open field, and with shouts rushed upon the

enemy, who lingered for a moment as if bewildered, and then fled. The Union troops with cheers advanced the whole line, and their defeat was complete; nor did they stop till they reached their entrenchments, eight miles distant. The Union forces pushed on, and late in the afternoon commenced a sharp cannonade. Night came on, and Thomas made preparation to assault in the morning. At daylight the ramparts were scaled, but not a man was to be seen. The night before the enemy had fled silently, leaving everything in their camp, lest the noise of destroying their munitions should betray their design. Their commander, General Zollicoffer, had been killed, and they were completely demoralized and abandoned all their fortifications in that region.

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1861.

The way was now open to occupy Cumberland and Pound Gaps, and an entrance into East Tennessee, so much dreaded by the Confederate authorities; but General Thomas was ordered to coöperate with the Federal advance toward Bowling Green and Nashville.

Jefferson Davis sent in a special message to the Confederate Congress. This document was evidently designed to produce a certain effect, especially in England and France, to whose courts he had just sent the two envoys. Every conflict thus far had resulted in a glorious victory for the South; not a word was said of the progress of the Federal cause in Missouri, Kentucky, and West Virginia; not a word of the capture of Hatteras, or Hilton Head, or Beaufort. The cotton-spinners of England were kindly admonished that the blockade might diminish the supply of that article. He proclaimed that the financial system adopted had worked well, when the general impression was that "their National Loan and the Cotton and Produce Loan" were failures.

Nov.  
18.

The question of the slave came more directly than usual before Congress on its assembling. A change was in progress among thinking minds in the free States in respect to his position in this contest. He was used by the nation's

Dec.  
2.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1862.

enemies to build fortifications, to raise corn and cotton, to support and protect the families of those who were in the armies of the Confederacy. He had been happily characterized as a "contraband" of war; yet commanders in the field had usually treated him as a slave, and in some instances, when a fugitive in the Union army, he was restored to his master when the latter was a Confederate. The annual report of the Secretary of War, Mr. Cameron, favored negro emancipation, and remuneration to the loyal slave owners.

The same report stated that the total number in the army was: infantry, 568,383; cavalry, 59,398; artillery, 24,686; rifles and sharpshooters, 8,395; engineers, 107. In the aggregate, 660,971, of which 20,334 were of the regular army. The Southern army numbered about 350,000. There are no data for an accurate estimate, as they usually exaggerated their numbers before a battle and depreciated them afterward.

Around Washington an army of about 200,000 was drilling during the summer and the entire autumn, and no doubt was as well disciplined as any such body of men could be. The people became impatient that this numerous and well appointed army should lie idle so long; and the soldiers themselves became equally impatient. The roads were in perfect order for an advance on the enemy, and the weather all that could be wished. The enemy were almost in sight, flaunting their flags and holding their entrenchments, while their newspapers sneered at the want of energy in the Union commander. In other portions of the country the Union generals made advances and were successful in West Virginia, Missouri and Kentucky, but "All is quiet on the Potomac" had passed into a proverb. The enemy went deliberately into winter quarters in the vicinity of Centreville and along the upper Potomac. The people began to feel there was something mysterious in this delay. The President appointed Edwin M. Stanton Secretary of War in place of Mr. Cameron, resigned. The new Secretary, by his untiring energy and intense loyalty, was most

Jan.  
15.

efficient in promoting the Union cause ; stern and inflexible in character, obedient only to the dictates of duty.

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1862.

It was planned, when the stage of water in the Tennessee and the Cumberland would admit of the free passage of the gunboats, to penetrate the Confederacy along these rivers, and thus turn the strongholds of the enemy at Columbus, on the Mississippi, and at Bowling Green, in Southern Kentucky. Captain A. H. Foote had been detailed from the United States Navy to command the western flotilla of gunboats. These boats were of somewhat different construction from the ocean-going, being flat-bottomed and not plated so heavily ; indeed some of them, from the lightness of their armor, were jocosely styled "tin-clads." Grant had about 30,000 men gathered at Cairo, Paducah and Bird's Point. Reconnoissances, which had sorely distracted the enemy, both by land and water, ascertained the positions of their forces.

At length the expedition was ready to move ; ten regiments, with their artillery and cavalry, embarked on transports at Cairo. The steamers headed up stream to Paducah, at the mouth of the Tennessee, and up that river. The Confederates now learned that Fort Henry was to be attacked. Captain Foote, with his gunboats, bore the steamers company. Four miles below the fort the troops under General McClernand disembarked, Foote meanwhile shelling the woods in search of the enemy. The following day transports brought more troops and General Grant.

Feb.  
2.

Captain Foote wished the attack to be deferred for a day, so that the fort could be so invested as to secure the prisoners, assuming that he himself could subdue the fort before the troops could get in position. The gunboats had not yet been tried, and both Grant and his officers evidently did not have the faith in them that the captain had. Prompt at the hour, 11 A. M., General McClernand moved to throw his division on the road leading from Fort Henry to Fort Donelson on the Cumberland. Captain Foote also

Feb.  
6.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1862.

moved at the same time, and passing up on the west side of an island, and, the water being high, over obstructions put in the channel, suddenly came into the river near the fort. The gunboats took their position and began to throw shots and shells, and approached nearer and nearer; so terrible was the storm that the earthworks crumbled away and nearly one half of the fort's guns were dismounted, and the infantry supports of the artillery fled, the Confederate flag was hauled down and the fort surrendered unconditionally. Only 130 prisoners were secured, the remainder escaped, as the Union forces were not yet in position to capture them, for, true to his word, Foote had subdued the fort in one hour and fifteen minutes. The astonishment at the success of the gunboats was as great among the army and its officers as the wholesome dread with which they inspired the Confederates. Unfortunately the boiler of the Essex gunboat was struck by a cannon ball, and the issuing steam scalded twenty-four of the men and killed four instantly, otherwise the boats were scarcely injured.

The captain sent gunboats in pursuit of the steamers, which they overtook and destroyed, and also transports laden with supplies for the enemy. They ascended to Florence, Ala., making clean work of all war material on the river. The Union gunboats, at almost every point, were welcomed by the people. Captain Foote returned on the evening of the battle to Cairo, to repair damages to the boats and prepare for the expedition against Fort Donelson on the west bank of the Cumberland, twelve miles east of Fort Henry. The Confederates deemed it of the greatest importance to hold this place. Thither General A. Sidney Johnston had sent troops under John B. Floyd and Buckner, the former having chief command.

The main fort stood on a gradually rising hill; the top, or plateau, contained about one hundred acres. The crest of this plateau was encircled by rifle pits, and artillery commanded every approach, and it was deemed impregnable by

the enemy. West and south of the fort were hills densely wooded and filled with ravines. CHAP.  
LVIII.

Grant moved from Fort Henry and invested Donelson on the afternoon of the same day. The next day were fierce artillery duels; sharpshooters on both sides were busy; desperate sorties by the enemy were repulsed; and an equally desperate attempt to capture a battery that annoyed the Union army was made by McClernand's order, but after a heroic effort failed.

1862.  
Feb.  
12.

The next morning Captain Foote came up with six gunboats, and at 2 P. M. commenced the bombardment of the fort. The boats came within 350 yards of the water battery. For more than an hour the battle raged. Only two of the enemy's guns were able to reply, when a chance shot cut the tiller chain of the Louisville. The boat veered round and exposed her side, and another such shot broke the rudder post, and she was carried helplessly down the current. Encouraged by this mishap, the enemy directed all their fire on the St. Louis, the flag boat, a heavy battery on the hill joining in. The St. Louis was soon as helpless as the Louisville, one of her side wheels being broken by a solid shot, and she too floated down the stream after having been struck fifty-nine times. Feb.  
14.

An assault had been intended all along the enemy's line when the fleet had silenced the guns in the water forts. After the result was known General Grant consulted with Foote, and it was deemed best to repair the gunboats and wait for the mortar floats, that were not in readiness when Foote left Cairo at the peremptory command of Halleck.

Meantime the enemy became alarmed lest they should be so hemmed in that they could not escape, and they resolved to cut their way out by dislodging their besiegers. Accordingly at dawn of day the next morning they moved out in three divisions, intending to converge to one point of attack on the Federal right next the river; but they unexpectedly found the Union army prepared in front of their own earthworks, and before they were formed in line Feb.  
15.

CHAP.  
LVIII.

1862.

of battle they were attacked and held in check, but only to make another attempt, and thus on the south side of the fort the conflict waged for five hours. Regiment after regiment of these inexperienced Union soldiers took their places and remained till their ammunition was exhausted, and they were relieved by fresh troops. Many of these when their cartridges failed begged to be led in a bayonet charge against the enemy. Such was the spirit of this whole army. The battle for the most part was fought in a forest with a dense undergrowth, which much impeded rapid movements. The Confederates thus far had made desperate aggressive attempts. Now Grant, who had been absent holding a consultation with Captain Foote, in turn determined to assault their lines, and he ordered the Federals, about one P.M., to carry the enemy's position by assault. This was most handsomely done, the enemy being driven at the point of the bayonet to their inner works. On the Federal right a similar assault was made, with the same result. The Union army held all their advanced positions during the night, and were preparing to renew the attack in the morning. This gloomy night was passed in bringing within the Union lines the wounded, scattered over a space of two miles and a half. The Union soldiers and the Confederates fared alike, being cared for with equal kindness.

There was evidently commotion in the enemy's camp. In the morning, when the Union lines advanced at daylight to the assault, numerous muskets were held up along their ramparts displaying white flags. The advance halted, and General Buckner desired to negotiate. He was left in command; Floyd and Pillow had slipped off up the river with some of their followers on board a transport, and left Buckner to bear the stigma of surrendering. He wished for an armistice and terms of capitulation. General Grant refused the request, and replied, "No terms except unconditional and immediate surrender can be accepted; I purpose to move immediately on your works." Buckner at

once surrendered. The number of prisoners was nearly 14,000, and their killed and wounded 1,300; and all the guns and military stores, an immense amount. This victory sent dismay into the Confederacy, while the rejoicings in the loyal States were great. The activity and energy of the Western undrilled armies were contrasted with the inactivity and discipline that reigned around Washington.

Immediately after this capture the enemy evacuated Bowling Green and moved toward Nashville, which place they merely passed through, destroying, in their haste, both the railway and suspension bridges over the Cumberland—an unnecessary destruction of property, as their ruin scarcely impeded the Union army. The Legislature with the Governor left in haste. The beautiful city was occupied by Federal forces and order restored. That stronghold Columbus, on the Mississippi, was also evacuated on the receipt of the news of the fall of Fort Donelson.

CHAP.  
LVIII.  
1862.

Feb.  
23.

Feb.  
25.

## CHAPTER LIX.

### LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Burnside's Expedition to North Carolina—Capture of Newbern—Battle of Pea Ridge—Capture of New Madrid and Island No 10—Battle of Pittsburg Landing or Shiloh—Capture of New Orleans—Death of Admiral Foote—Battle of river iron clads—Capture of Memphis—Evacuation of Corinth—Plans of movements on Richmond—The Merrimac and Monitor duel.

CHAP.  
LIX.

1862.

ON the Atlantic coast a naval and land expedition under Commander Goldsboro and General A. E. Burnside was fitted out, against Roanoke Island—the scene of Sir Walter Raleigh's colony<sup>1</sup>—and to make a demonstration on the coast of North Carolina, to encourage the Union men, and also create a diversion south of Richmond and Norfolk.

Feb.  
8.

In approaching Albemarle Sound the hostile fleet and an earthwork known as Fort Barton were encountered ; the enemy's fleet soon retired out of harm's way, and Goldsboro opened upon the fort, but was not able to reduce it after a bombardment of some hours. During the night the troops landed, and in the morning, under General Foster, moved to the attack over a swampy and difficult way. On the march they came upon a battery, protected by a swamp on either side ; Foster flanked the battery right and left, and when the Union soldiers came out upon their rear flanks, the enemy threw down their arms and fled. This success was

<sup>1</sup> Hist. pp. 72-74.

followed up and their entire force—about 3,000—on the island of Roanoke was captured. CHAP.  
LIX.

Burnside issued the usual proclamation, promising protection to those engaged in their usual avocations and enjoining the Union soldiers not to injure private property on their march. Roanoke Island became the base of operations; and from it were sent out many expeditions which essentially interfered with the English blockade runners by seizing harbors and filling channels of approach. 1862.

The most important capture of Newbern on the Neuse was accomplished by a combined land and naval force. The troops landed 17 miles below the town, and marched up the road along the river bank and a railway track from Beaufort, the gunboats by their shells keeping the enemy at a respectful distance. About three miles below the town was found a formidable fieldwork, which promised to offer much resistance. This fortification was flanked by a swamp and Burnside sent a detachment round, while he pressed the enemy in front; the detachment appeared on the flank, but the Confederates held their ground until a Rhode Island regiment, on the run, charged bayonet and changed the tide of battle; other Union troops pressed on and the rout was complete. A portion of the fleeing enemy reached a train of cars and carried the news of defeat to Newbern. There, as was their custom, they began to burn a bridge and all the rosin and turpentine, and the steamers at the wharf, two of which were saved by the United States gunboats. The enemy had wantonly set the town on fire, but the citizens with aid from the United States Marines succeeded in putting it out, though not until the best Hotel and the Court House and many private residences were consumed. General Foster was installed as Military Governor in Newbern. Mar.  
11.

Other places in the vicinity were captured, such as Beaufort and Washington, on Pamlico River. Fort Macon, a strong fortification built by the United States Government, to protect the harbor of Beaufort, was reduced after a bom- Mar  
14.

**CHAP.** bardment of eleven hours. This secured the blockading  
**LIX.** fleet one of the finest and safest harbors on the coast.

1862.

**Mar.**  
**1.**

Major-General S. R. Curtis was directed by General Halleck to drive Generals Price and Rains and their bands out of Missouri into Arkansas. Curtis was soon on the march toward Springfield, where Price and his band had been for some time. The latter took the alarm and hastily retreated South, Curtis pursuing and the enemy retreating, till at length they reached the Boston Mountains. Curtis learned that they were concentrating against him under General Van Dorn, whose army numbered about 34,000 men; of these Ben McCullough had 13,000—out-numbering the Union army more than four to one. These made attacks on the various Federal divisions as they came up, but were always repulsed. At length they concentrated at Pea Ridge in Arkansas, and the enemy advanced to give battle, which raged all day on the Federal right with scarcely a cessation. The ground was hilly and covered

**Mar.**  
**7.**

with thick underbrush and broken up by ravines. On the left wing the contest was equally stubborn, but more varied in result. Ben McCullough made a desperate assault upon Colonel Osterhaus, of Sigel's division, but Curtis ordered up Davis's troops to the Colonel's aid, and the combined force drove the enemy headlong from the field, they leaving dead their commanding generals, McIntosh and Ben McCullough—the latter the master-spirit of their army. Success had also crowned the left wing. During the night both armies lay on their arms; the Union soldiers resting for the first time in two days' marching and sleepless nights.

At sunrise the battle was renewed, and raged most of the day along the whole line, nearly three miles; Sigel handling his artillery with wonderful rapidity and effect. Every attempt to break the Union line was foiled. For more than two hours this continued, when Sigel began to advance his part of the line; the enemy sought shelter in the woods, but the Federals charged through their shelter and drove them with the bayonet to an open field beyond,

when they broke and fled in all directions. Thus ended the two days' fight at Pea Ridge. Never before had the enemy suffered so disastrous a defeat. Soon after those who had not deserted were transferred to the army of General S. A. Johnston, again to meet the Union soldiers under General Grant.

CHAP.  
LIX.  
1862.

The National Government never lost sight of the importance of the control of the Mississippi river, and to that end Admiral Foote directed his attention in connection with a land force under General Pope. The enemy made the most strenuous exertions to retain their hold of the great river as a most important source of supplies, both beyond it and on its tributaries.

The islands in the Mississippi from the mouth of the Ohio downward are designated by numbers. The Confederates chose available points on the river to fortify, such as New Madrid in Missouri, opposite Island No. 10, Tiptonville in Kentucky, and No. 10 itself—all three within supporting distance. To this island they had directed special attention, Beauregard, their best engineer, superintending the works and pronouncing them impregnable. In consequence here were collected vast military stores and provisions as for a long siege.

Admiral Foote was to bombard No. 10, and at the same time Pope to capture New Madrid. The latter found the town fortified by earthworks and defended by three gunboats, which, because of the high water in the river, were able to sweep its banks, and in the face of these guns it would be impossible to hold the town if captured. He therefore sent to Cairo for siege guns—24 pounders. These soon came, and during the night time were placed in position within 800 yards of the enemy's main fortification, and in the morning opened upon the astonished enemy, every shot telling with fine effect, dismounting several of their heaviest guns. The shot also reached their gunboats and steamers in the river, compelling them to hasten out of range. A night of storm and rain came on, and in the

Mar  
8.

CHAP. morning, just as the guns were about to reopen, a white flag  
LIX. was seen approaching. The messenger brought word that  
1862. the enemy had evacuated the fort, abandoning everything,  
Mar. and the town authorities wished to surrender.  
14.

Immediately after the surrender General Pope prepared to coöperate with Admiral Foote in the reduction of No. 10. The latter came down with his gun-boats and mortar-floats, and for twenty-two days bombarded the island, but without effecting any great break in the works. The whole west shore of the river opposite the island was under water from the spring freshets, and Pope had no transports to carry his men to the east side of the river, and they could not pass the batteries on No. 10. Pope determined, at the suggestion of General Hamilton, to cut a canal across the peninsula, in the rear of New Madrid, to the river below, and pass through this the transports. By an ingenious apparatus the trees were sawed off four and a half feet below the surface of the overflowing water, and thus a passage was made for the transports which at once passed through. This unique canal was twelve miles long and fifty feet wide. On the evening of the day on which this canal was finished, the gunboat *Carondelet*, in the midst of a thunderstorm, ran past the batteries on No. 10, and two nights after the gunboat *Pittsburg* performed the same feat. These boats soon silenced the rebel batteries along the river below, and by midnight of the same day Pope's army was across the river and pushing for Tiptonville to intercept the enemy fleeing from No. 10, which place, it was rumored, they were evacuating. Early the next morning No. 10 surrendered to Admiral Foote "17 officers, 363 soldiers, 70 heavy cannon, ranging from 32 to 100 pounders, the latter rifled, and an immense amount of other military stores, four steamers and a floating battery." Meanwhile Pope had intercepted the retreating foe, who laid down their arms, surrendering unconditionally as prisoners of war, in all nearly 7,000. A few days before the surrender Beauregard left No. 10. This defeat and loss was a source of great mortification to the

Apr.  
4.

May  
7.

Confederate authorities, and was equally a gratification to the loyal people of the free States.

CHAP.  
LIX.  
1862.

General Grant and his army left Nashville and marched for the Tennessee River, which they reached, about 240 miles from its mouth, at an obscure place of three or four houses, known as Pittsburg Landing, but now famous in the annals of the war.

General Buell soon after began the march with his Division for the same place. The ultimate point sought was Corinth, a strategic position in Northern Mississippi on the Memphis and Charleston railway. For two months the enemy had been concentrating here, and fortifying the hills in the immediate vicinity, General A. S. Johnston first in command, and Beauregard second. The most strenuous efforts were made to resist the Union army; Manassas and Centreville were evacuated—McClellan by his inactivity permitting it—and their lines drawn more closely around Richmond; in order to spare troops for this emergency; General Bragg was ordered from Pensacola with his well-drilled artillery and infantry; Columbus was evacuated and under General-Bishop Polk the garrison marched to the same point; and from Arkansas, late from Pea Ridge, came General Van Dorn, bringing 15,000 men. The enemy advanced from their stronghold to meet Grant's army at the crossing, and if possible crush him before Buell could bring up his forces. The Union army had crossed over and was stationed in a semi-circle, the center in the front of the road to Corinth, the left extending round to the river at Hamburg, four miles distant. The Shiloh meeting-house stood directly out in the country, two and a half miles from the landing; around this church was the principal conflict, hence the Confederates name the battle Shiloh. The country west of the landing is rough, and covered with a dense forest of scrub-oak and black jack, with here and there an open field. The enemy skirmished more or less for two days, no doubt to ascertain the Federal position.

Mar.  
18.

Early Sunday morning they drove in the advanced

CHAP.  
LIX.

1862.  
Apr.  
6.

Federal pickets. The entire division flew to arms and awaited the enemy's advance. After an hour's waiting they came on, attacking the center; and, extending their line by an oblique movement, threw an overwhelming force upon the left, driving the Federals back and capturing General Prentiss and his regiment almost entire. They pressed on, turning to the left, but were held in check by three Illinois regiments till they were overpowered and forced to retire, losing three guns. General W. T. Sherman still held his first line at the meeting-house until the enemy passed round to his rear, when he fell back and took a new position. "My division," he says, "was made up of regiments perfectly new, nearly all having recently received their muskets." Great numbers of these frightened men found their way back to the river, two miles distant, and no efforts of their officers could induce them to return. The enemy by main force drove the Union left through their camp toward the river, but were at length held at bay for four hours by the pluck of General McClermand and his troops. The Confederates had planned not to attack but in overpowering numbers; thus when they attacked the center they deployed their main force against the left. They well knew that, if at all, they must crush this advanced Union force before Buell could come up, or troops under Generals Nelson and Thomas could reach the field of battle. At five P.M. was a brief lull in the firing. The enemy fell back, and then suddenly, as if to take the Federals by surprise, threw forward their whole force for the second time, with such fierceness and desperation that the Union army was compelled to fall back. Just then the gunboats Lexington and Tyler came up the river. They soon learned by a messenger from General Grant the position of the enemy. The boats took their station and sent in with great rapidity their shot and shell, the latter bursting amid the ranks of the Confederates. "The shells hurling death and destruction through the scrub-oak jungles under whose cover the enemy fought securely." In

less than thirty minutes they silenced the Southern batteries. Just before the boats opened fire Buell's advanced division appeared on the Union right, and they successfully resisted the last charge of the enemy that day. This was nearly a great victory. They had the advantage of superior numbers; on the morrow that would be changed. General A. Sidney Johnston, their commander-in-chief, was among the slain.

CHAP.  
LIX.  
1862.

The Union army in this battle numbered about 38,000, while the enemy had 45,000, under their best generals—A. S. Johnston, Beauregard, Bishop Polk, and Hardee—and the best fighting material they had in the field; but in endurance and cool, determined courage the Northern soldiers were superior, though the Southern had the more dash.

Reinforcements for the Union army began to arrive on the evening of the battle. The remainder of Buell's forces; Nelson and Crittenden's divisions, some on foot and some on steamers; two batteries of the regular army, and McCook's division, by a forced march, reached the landing early the following morning.

It was General Grant's turn now to take the offensive, and a general advance was ordered to begin at 5 o'clock the next morning. The hostile pickets were driven in and the battle became general along the whole line. At 10 A. M. the Union army was moving forward and forcing the enemy step by step from point to point, and though occasionally checked, the Union army moved steadily forward; their fire was regular as clock-work, and the divisions sustained each other admirably. At length the enemy, after repeated attempts to break through the Union lines and failing, seemed to despair of succeeding. For seven long hours they had fought valiantly. Beauregard made the most strenuous exertions and exposed himself in his efforts to prevent his army falling back toward Corinth. The pursuit was not pressed vigorously owing to the intervening woods, which impeded the movements of cavalry, and the infantry

Apr.  
7.

CHAP. only pursued the retreating foe for a mile or two. The  
 LIX. enemy fell back to their entrenchments at Corinth, and  
 1862. Beauregard proclaimed a great Confederate victory; that was for the public, but his private dispatch to Jefferson Davis, captured at Huntsville by General O. M. Mitchel, told the true story, calling for reinforcements, and saying: "If defeated here we lose the Mississippi Valley and probably our cause."

The Union loss in killed, 1,785; wounded, 7,883; the Southern, killed, 1,728; wounded, 8,012. The enemy, for the most part, were better protected by the dense woods, as they fought on ground of their own choosing.

While these stirring events were enacting in the West a combined expedition was fitting out against New Orleans in the East, General B. F. Butler to command the land forces and Admiral D. S. Farragut the naval. Through the influence of Butler the men for the enterprise were principally enlisted in New England. The rendezvous for the troops was Ship Island, lying in the waters of the Gulf midway between Mobile and New Orleans, by way of Lake Pontchartrain, thus threatening either place. A powerful fleet of mortar boats had been fitted out at the Brooklyn Navy Yard under the direction of Captain David D. Porter. This flotilla joined the fleet off the mouth passes of the Mississippi. Mar. 16. Admiral Farragut commanded the whole armament, and Porter, under him, had control of the mortar boats. The whole fleet and transports soon passed within the passes, and Apr. 4. gunboats acted as pickets up the river to give notice of the approach of certain iron-clads and rams and fire rafts—huge barges laden with split pine over which had been poured melted pitch, rendering them highly inflammable. One of these rams, the *Manassas*, carried English rifled guns. They also had an iron-clad floating battery, the *Louisiana*, besides 18 armed steamers, some of which were protected by an armor of iron. Their naval commander, Hollins, announced that with these he would annihilate the Union fleet. An exceedingly strong chain was stretched on floats

across the channel from Fort Jackson to the opposite shore, near to Fort St. Philip. This chain was commanded by the guns of the forts. These forts—75 miles below the city—were very strong structures built by the United States Government. Fort Jackson had 120 guns and St. Philip nearly as many. In addition, the enemy had flanking batteries commanding the river for three miles, and also the approach from Lake Pontchartrain.

CHAP.  
LIX.  
1862.

Arrangements completed, the Union squadron moved to the attack. Then occurred one of the most terrible cannon battles on record. Fourteen mortar-boats, throwing immense shells from the west shore, and six others on the eastern bank of the river in the swamp passages, and so covered by green bushes as to be well masked, six ships of war, and gunboats up and down the stream took part in the thunderous fray, while the forts replied with great vigor. The bombardment lasted all day; the guns in the embrasures of Fort Jackson were silenced, and also the last one on the side of St. Philip. Meanwhile Hollins sent down fire-rafts in the midst of the battle, but they did but little harm, as they were all destroyed by balls from the guns or seized by grappling irons prepared for the purpose and towed where they could harmlessly burn. At night a deserter came aboard and informed Porter of the condition of the forts. From his statement it was evident they could not be reduced for several days. This information determined Farragut to run past the forts, and orders were given to prepare for the hazardous attempt. Meantime the mortar-boats continued to throw shells into the forts.

Apr.  
18.

That night two parties in boats passed up and cut the chain without being discovered, and also a boat with muffled oars passed above the forts and took soundings, finding the channel free of obstructions. This, even, the enemy did not discover, though they had large fires burning all night along the shore to prevent surprises.

Orders were passed that night from ship to ship to prepare to run the gauntlet, and at 2 o'clock in the morning

Apr.  
24.

CHAP. the fleet was under way. The darkness was so great that  
LIX. the sentinels at the fort did not discover the movement  
1862. until the first division approached the chain, in a minute  
more, and both the forts opened. This was the signal for  
Porter, who, with his mortars, threw a shower of bursting  
shells inside the forts, which interfered materially with  
their firing; the vessels as they passed by poured in their  
broadside. As they passed beyond the forts they found  
themselves in the midst of hostile iron-clads and rams; the  
latter butting in every direction. The Union gunboats,  
generally, were able to dodge them, and in turn pay them  
the compliment of a broadside. The *Cayuga*, a swift  
vessel, passing through compelled three steamers to strike  
their flags. The ram *Manassas* was running round butting  
at anything in the smoke and darkness; finally, she ran  
foul of the *Brooklyn*, which gave her a broadside with her  
heavy guns, and the ram disappeared in the darkness.  
Only one vessel was lost, the *Varuna*, Captain Boggs. The  
career of this vessel deserves relating. The captain finding  
himself "in a nest of rebel steamers" started forward, giv-  
ing broadsides right and left; the first went into a steamer  
crowded with troops, exploded her boilers and she drifted  
ashore; afterward three other vessels were driven ashore in  
flames and blown up. Then the *Varuna* was attacked by  
an iron-clad ram, which raked her and butted her on the  
quarter, but she managed, meantime, to plant three 8-inch  
shells in the armor of her foe, and a rifle shot, when the  
ram dropped out of action. At this moment another  
large iron-clad, with a prow under water, struck the  
*Varuna* in the port gangway, doing considerable damage;  
then her enemy drew off and made another plunge and  
struck again in the same place, crushing in her sides; now  
the *Varuna* gave her antagonist five 8-inch shells; these  
settled her, and she floated ashore in flames. The *Varuna*  
herself was in a sinking condition; but her men were taken  
off by boats from the other vessels before she went down.  
All along the bank were stranded Confederate steamers and

rams, nearly all on fire from Union shots and shells; two or three steamers and the iron-clad battery *Louisiana* had escaped, and sought protection under the guns of Fort Jackson; two or three hundred prisoners were taken.

CHAP.  
LIX.  
1862.

The next day Farragut was ready to move, and the following morning the fleet steamed up the river, and after being delayed one-half hour to silence some batteries, he reached New Orleans in the afternoon, and demanded its surrender, which was complied with by the mayor. General Lovel, who was in command, before leaving the city had fired the long line of ships, steamers and flat-boats, and vast stores of cotton, tobacco and sugar—a most wanton destruction of private property, not all contraband of war. The United States public buildings were taken possession of by Union soldiers to protect them. The forts Jackson and St. Philip also capitulated when the fall of New Orleans was known. General Butler arrived and entered upon his duties as commandant of the city and vicinity. The city was garrisoned immediately—the troops marching in to the tune of “Yankee Doodle,” and order restored under the skillful and energetic rule of Butler. He prepared his proclamation and sent it to the various papers to be published. They all refused. A sufficient number of practical printers volunteered from the ranks, took possession of one of the offices, and issued the proclamation. This incident was similar to many others that occurred during this war showing the intelligence and industrial skill of the soldiers of the Union armies.

Apr.  
26.

Apr.  
28.

Farragut sent the gunboat *Iroquois*, Captain Palmer, up the river to the capital of the State, Baton Rouge, which surrendered on demand; then to Natchez, Mississippi, which place surrendered; and then to Vicksburg, which was found to be fortified and garrisoned, and she refused to run up the Stars and Stripes. Her time came in due season.

May  
12.

During this time Admiral Foote and General Pope were working their way down the Mississippi, capturing fortified places one after another; delayed a few days at Fort Wright,

CHAP. Chickasaw Bluffs. Here Pope was ordered to join Halleck  
 LIX. at Corinth; and Admiral Foote, at the imperative orders  
 1862. of his physician, also retired from the service on account of  
 Apr. wounds received in the attack on Fort Donelson. A few  
 12. weeks later he died, a victim of patriotic ardor, and cheerful  
 in the Christian's hope.

May Captain J. E. Davis succeeded Admiral Foote; shortly  
 10. after, he defeated a Southern fleet of iron-clads and armed  
 steamers under Captain Montgomery, in a conflict of thirty  
 minutes; Forts Wright and Pillow were abandoned by the  
 enemy; this opened the way down toward Memphis. The  
 June 4. Union fleet was joined by Captain Ellet's rams of unique  
 construction; made out of powerful tug-boats. The whole  
 fleet passed down to island No. 45, two miles above Mem-  
 phis, off which place lay the Confederate iron-clads. At four  
 A.M., Captain Davis steamed down to find the enemy's fleet  
 on the alert. The battle began at long range, but Ellet's  
 June 6. two rams, the *Queen of the West* and the *Monarch*, passed  
 rapidly by the Union gunboats, and rushed with great im-  
 petuosity into the midst of the Confederates, firing heavy  
 shots right and left, and when opportunity served plying  
 the enemy with hot water by means of a hose of peculiar  
 construction. Then came on the gunboats, and the result  
 of this singular contest was that only one of the ten gun-  
 boats of the Confederates escaped—they either being sunk  
 or blown up. In consequence of this destruction of their  
 whole fleet Memphis surrendered unconditionally.

The Confederates deemed Corinth an important strategic  
 point, being at the junction of the Memphis and Charleston  
 and Mobile and Ohio railways, but that importance was  
 gone as soon as the roads were cut and Memphis in the  
 hands of the Union forces. General Halleck assumed com-  
 mand after the battle of Pittsburg Landing, and advanced  
 into the vicinity of Corinth and commenced digging paral-  
 lels and making approaches. Thus he spent six weeks.  
 The enemy in the meantime, were leisurely carrying away  
 May 30. their war material, and when this was done they evacuated

their stronghold, while Halleck kept 120,000 men within striking distance until they were well on their way. General Pope was sent in pursuit, but captured only about 2,000 prisoners. This was the only instance, thus far, of undue tardiness in a Western army. The enemy had 47,000 men.

CHAP.  
LIX.  
1862.

We have seen the Union soldiers in the West gaining battle after battle, and in no instance failing to accomplish their ultimate object. They met the enemy in superior numbers at Pea Ridge and drove them out of Missouri, they captured Forts Henry and Donelson, and opened up the Tennessee and the Cumberland rivers, compelling the evacuation of that stronghold, Columbus; won the battle of Shiloh, and compelled the enemy to retire to Corinth, which in turn they were made to abandon. Along the South Atlantic coast battles had been fought, and place after place had been captured and held; an expedition against New Orleans had been eminently successful, and now, after many conflicts, the whole of the Mississippi was held from above to down below Memphis, and from its mouth up to Vicksburg. While these advances were progressing, the Army of the Potomac was chafing at their imposed inactivity, and drilling in entrenchments around the National Capital.

General McClellan had asked for men till his numbers had gradually increased in February to 222,196 names on his roll, of whom 193,142 were fit for duty. In the previous August, in a note to President Lincoln, he says: "I propose with this force to move into the heart of the enemy's country, and crush the rebellion in its very heart." Yet no movement was made. Time passed on, and McClellan did not intimate to the anxious President or Secretary of War that he had any plans of a campaign. Several conferences were held by the President and some members of his Cabinet, at one of which the President asked the Commander-in-Chief what he intended to do with his army. After a long pause, he remarked he "was very unwilling to develop his plans, but would do so if ordered." The Presi-

Feb  
1.

CHAP. dent asked if he had fixed any time in his own mind when  
LIX. he would move the army. The reply was, he had. "On  
1862. that," rejoined the President, "I will adjourn this meet-  
Jan. ing." Yet McClellan for weeks gave no intimation of  
18. moving. At length the President felt it his duty to order a  
general advance of the Union armies on the 22d of Febru-  
ary. It is a coincidence that on this day Jefferson Davis  
was inaugurated at Richmond President of the Confederacy  
for six years, and Alexander H. Stephens Vice-President.  
Feb. Perhaps the President in designating this day had in mind  
22. that it was the anniversary of the birth of Washington.

Previous to this President Lincoln addressed a note to McClellan, saying, "Your plan is by the Chesapeake, up the Rappahannock to Urbana on the York; mine to move directly to a point on the railroad south-west of Manassas. If you will give satisfactory answers to the following questions I shall gladly yield my plan to yours: Does not your plan involve a greatly larger expenditure of *time* and *money* than *mine*? Wherein is a victory *more valuable* by your plan than by mine? In fact, would it not be *less valuable* in this, that it would break no great line of the enemy's communications, while mine would? In case of disaster, would not a retreat be *more difficult* by your plan than mine?" No direct reply was made to these questions, though a report of the same date by the General-in-Chief was claimed to answer. The plan of the President and his advisers was virtually the one selected by General Grant when he advanced on Richmond.

When the Norfolk navy-yard was destroyed and fell into the hands of the enemy, the *Merrimac* steam frigate was partially burned and sunk, but was afterward raised by the enemy and made over as an iron-clad of tremendous power. From hints thrown out by their newspapers this mysterious monster became a source of great dread to the fleet in and around the lower Chesapeake and Hampton Roads.

Meanwhile Captain Ericsson was building at New York

a unique iron-clad on a new principle, his own invention. This was a revolving turret, made entirely of successive layers of wrought iron plates to the thickness of eleven inches. This turret was turned at will by steam; within it were two rifled guns throwing each an elongated shot weighing 175 pounds, and loaded by machinery; the turret had two protected port-holes, and was placed on an iron-clad hulk, the deck of which was only about three feet above the water and clear of every thing except the turret.

CHAP.  
LIX.  
1862.

For many weeks the sloop of war *Cumberland* and the frigate *Congress* had watched off Newport News for the expected monster, now called the *Virginia* by the enemy. On the morning of March 8th she suddenly steamed out from the navy yard at Gosport, and made for the *Cumberland*, but when passing by the *Congress* gave her a broadside, doing much damage. The *Cumberland* had a heavy armament of 9 and 10-inch Dahlgren guns, and she poured in her broadsides with precision; but these heavy balls glanced harmlessly off the sloping sides of the *Merrimac*, while one of her solid shots tore through the wooden sloop's bulwarks. The *Cumberland's* men fought desperately, warping round their vessel to give effective broadsides; presently the *Merrimac* rushed at full speed upon the *Cumberland* and pierced her hull below the water line, making a hole four feet in diameter, and crushing in the frigate's upper decks, still pouring in solid shot and making a horrible slaughter on the crowded decks. Of the 450 men on board not a man wavered in this presence of death; their vessel was fast filling; in five minutes the water reached the berth deck where lay the dying and wounded. It was seen by her officers that the vessel must sink; at the last moment a salute was fired in honor of their country's flag; hardly had this been done when the ship gave a lurch and disappeared under the water. More than 300 of these brave fellows perished, the remainder were picked up by boats which put off from shore.

Mar.  
8.

Meanwhile the *Congress* was engaged with the *Merri-*

CHAP. *mac's* two steam tenders—the *Jamestown* and the *Patrick*  
 LIX. *Henry*. She was towed into shallow water and grounded,  
 1862. but not out of reach of the *Merrimac's* guns, which soon  
 Apr. disabled every gun on board the frigate and set her on fire.  
 6. Lieutenant Pendegrast hauled down his flag to spare further  
 slaughter. An officer from the *Merrimac* boarded the  
*Congress* and received the surrender, but when on his way  
 back some persons on the shore fired rifles upon his tug.  
 When he returned the *Merrimac* shelled the shore and  
 resumed fire upon the helpless *Congress*, whose men were  
 not responsible for the firing from the shore. It was a most  
 unwarrantable slaughter of innocent men. The *Congress*  
 was set on fire by these shells and burned until the maga-  
 zine was exploded; 150 men were lost. The *Merrimac*  
 now made for the steam frigate *Minnesota*, which, when  
 coming to engage in the conflict, had grounded three miles  
 away. The commander of the *Merrimac*, afraid of getting  
 into shallow water, contented himself by firing a few shots  
 at long range which did little harm. The Southern iron-  
 clad withdrew at seven in the evening to renew her work of  
 destruction in the morning, which was to sink or destroy  
 every ship of war in the roads, and then what could she not  
 do? The seaboard cities would be at her mercy. No  
 wonder this was a night of gloom in the Roads and of  
 anxiety all over the land, whither the telegraph had carried  
 the news of these disasters.

Just after the *Merrimac* disappeared a singular looking  
 craft appeared in the offing; it was the Ericsson invention  
 —the *Monitor*—of which we have just spoken. She  
 reported for duty and took her position near the *Minne-*  
*sota*.

Early Sunday morning the *Merrimac* was seen coming  
 from behind Sewall's Point. She ran down near the Rip  
 Raps, then turned and ran for the grounded frigate, whose  
 heavy stern guns gave her their solid shot. The *Monitor*—  
 designated by the sailors as a cheese-box on a raft—ran  
 down to meet the monster, which seemed to look askance

at the little craft, and threw a shot at her, as if to say, Get out of the way or you may be hurt ; but instead, placing herself between the *Minnesota* and her antagonist, she paid her respects by a solid shot of 175 pounds. The *Merrimac* now turned with her broadsides against the turret, but without effect. The *Monitor's* two guns deliberately put in their shot. The *Merrimac* attempted to run down her little antagonist, and only once grazed her. The nimble *Monitor* was under such perfect control that she would dodge her enemy, and as she passed regularly gave her a shot. The *Merrimac* now gave up the attempt to run the craft down, but turned her attention to the *Minnesota*, but the *Monitor* again interposed by placing herself between the combatants ; and the *Merrimac*, to get rid of her, stood down the bay, the *Monitor* pursuing. Presently the *Merrimac* turned and ran full speed at her pursuer, which dodged her enemy, and, as she passed, plunged a shot into her iron roof. The *Merrimac* soon turned and made for Sewall's Point, pursued for some distance by the *Monitor* ; but as the latter had orders only to act on the defensive, she withdrew as soon as the victory was won. It has never transpired how much injury the *Merrimac* received. It is certain, however, she no more ventured out from her anchorage, where she was carefully guarded by land batteries, and in the end was blown to pieces lest she should fall into Federal hands. Thus ended the most influential naval duel that ever occurred, as it revolutionized the naval warfare of the world. All the naval powers now began to build iron-clads and virtually throw aside wooden men-of-war. The United States Government also began to build monitors of various sizes, some very large, and soon had a fleet of iron-clads more powerful than the war fleets of all the world combined.

CHAP.  
LIX.  
1862.

May  
11.

At the last broadside of the *Merrimac*, Captain Worden, the commander of the *Monitor*, was in the pilot-house, and when looking through the eye-crevice a heavy shot struck the house and the concussion knocked him senseless. When

CHAP. consciousness returned, the fight was over and all was  
LIX. silent. He anxiously asked, "Have I saved the frigate?"  
1862. "Aye, aye, and whipped the *Merrimac*," was the answer.  
"Then I care not what becomes of me," said he.

When the firing on Sumter took place, the great majority of the loyal people of the free States, and the officers of the National Government, had hitherto complied faithfully with the spirit of the Constitution, and of the laws of Congress in respect to the rendition of fugitive slaves. Even when it was known that more than a thousand of that class had been for weeks repairing fortifications, throwing up earthworks, and mounting guns against Fort Sumter, yet the loyal people did not realize that by this act the relation of the slaves to the Union had been changed. So strong was the influence of law, that for some time after the war began the slaves who fled in search of freedom to the Federal armies were returned to their masters as fugitives. It was the Abolitionists alone who were decidedly opposed to this policy. The loyal people of the free States had not yet been educated up to that plane, nor to that of utilizing these fugitives for the cause of the Union. Masters would come to the camps of the Federal army and demand their slaves under the famous Fugitive Slave Bill; and these demands were complied with by the generals of Democratic sympathies, with one marked exception—that of Benjamin F. Butler, in command at Fortress Monroe. That shrewd lawyer-general took in the situation; he refused to surrender them, taking the military view that these fugitives were "*contraband of war*." This decision covered the case; for it was well known that the slaves, by their labor on fortifications and otherwise, were more efficient aiders of the Confederacy than if they were actually in the field. The term "*contraband*" became during the war the popular designation of such fugitives. Butler put these men to work and paid them wages.

## CHAPTER LX.

### LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Movement of the Army of the Potomac.—Evacuation of Manassas.—Yorktown, Siege of.—Battle of Williamsburg.—Sanitary Commission.—The Retreat.—Excitement in Richmond.—Conscription Law.—Jackson in Shenandoah Valley.—The Chickahominy.—Battle of Fair Oaks.—Lee in Command.—Battle of Gaines' Mill or Cold Harbor.—Change of Base.—Battle of Malvern Hill.—Harrison's Landing.—Cedar Mountain.—Second Battle of Bull Run.—Lee Invades Maryland.—Harper's Ferry Captured.—Battle of Antietam.—Lee Retreats.—McClellan's Slowness; His Removal.—Burnside in Command.—Battle of Fredericksburg.

PREPARATIONS on a large scale were made to move the Army of the Potomac to its destination on the Peninsula. There were employed 113 steamers, 185 schooners, and 85 barges with tugboats. These were to pass down the bay and up the Rappahannock to Urbana, and thence to "reach the vicinity of Richmond before they (the rebels) could concentrate all their troops there from Manassas." The latter had railroad communication and could place their troops in defense of Richmond long before the Union army could make its way across a country more or less woody, with four rivers to pass, proverbial for their marshy banks, which in the spring were always overflowed by freshets. This plan of advance, as the President suggested, was to leave a way open on the right flank of the army by which a force accustomed to move with the rapidity of the enemy, or, as we have seen, the Union armies in the West, could come

CHAP.  
LX.  
1862.

CHAP. in overwhelming numbers and attack Washington before it  
IX.  
1862. would be possible to recall the Potomac army from its position. For this reason President Lincoln retained McDowell's division for some time that the Capital might be secure. As the Confederates had their spies, male and female, in Washington, every fact worth knowing was communicated to them, and the city when known to be in a position of defense was secure from attack. In a note to McClellan the President gives his reason for retaining McDowell. This reason will always be satisfactory to the people. He says: "After you left I ascertained that less than 20,000 unorganized men, without a single field battery, were all you designed to be left for the defense of Washington and Manassas Junction, and part of this even was to go to General Hooker's old position."

Mar. The Confederate General T. J. Jackson — afterward  
19. known as "Stonewall"—made a dash at Winchester, where General Shields was in command, but after a day's skirmishing and fighting retired in the night up the valley, destroying all the bridges on the route. The Baltimore and Ohio Railway, through the exertions of the chivalrous General Lander, was once more put in order that supplies could be brought to Washington. General Lander had been wounded in a previous battle, but would not retire, though urged by his physician, and in consequence his great exertions led to his death.

The enemy had been for some time leisurely evacuating Manassas and transporting their war material by railway to Richmond without interference from the Union army. Twenty hours after the fact was known along the front "it was made apparent at headquarters that the enemy was evacuating Centreville and Manassas as well as on the Upper Potomac." Yet orders were not issued for a pursuit until the enemy had been gone thirty-six hours. The Union army, after four days' marching, returned and had "gained some experience on the march and bivouac." So said the General-in-Chief.

Mar.  
10.

“General Joe Johnston had 44,000 men at Centreville and Manassas, and Jackson had 6,000 in the Shenandoah Valley. Johnston finally fell back behind the Rapidan, deemed a more defensive position than the Rappahannock, of which it is a branch.”<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
LX.  
1862.

Two divisions—General Heintzelman commander—left Alexandria on transports for Fortress Monroe. Several days after McDowell’s division was ready to move, and as it has been said the President retained it to make Washington safe; but on June 6th, when McClellan might need them, a large portion of the corps (Franklin and McCall’s divisions) was dispatched to him, who says in a note to the President, “I shall be in perfect readiness to move forward to take Richmond the moment McCall reaches here and the ground will admit the passage of artillery.”

Mar.  
18.

June  
8.

The plan adopted by McClellan to reach Richmond was by the peninsula formed by the York and James Rivers; the latter not used lest the *Merrimac* should interfere, though she was closely blockaded by the *Monitor* and other war vessels. For one entire month the Union army was engaged in making the most elaborate redoubts and parallels, and placing in order siege guns, while the enemy could leave at any moment, as their rear was open and unobstructed. The Confederate government never intended to make a stand at Yorktown, and General Magruder had only about 11,000 men to defend a line “embracing a front from Yorktown to Milberry Point, thirteen and a half miles.” But when the comparatively immense force of McClellan appeared, and after a delay of ten days or more began to dig trenches and not attack, General Joe Johnston availed himself of the delay to join Magruder with 53,000 men,<sup>2</sup> and he only remained to make a show of defense until Richmond could be thoroughly fortified. Had the Union army at once advanced with its much superior numbers, Magruder would have fallen back toward Richmond.

Apr.  
4.  
to  
May  
4.

<sup>1</sup> Life of Lee, p. 74.

<sup>2</sup> Life of Lee, p. 72.

CHAP. Magruder, surprised that he was not attacked, says:  
LX.  
1862. "In a few days the object of McClellan's delay was apparent. In every direction in front of our lines, through intervening woods and along the open fields, earthworks began to appear." McClellan made requisitions upon the War Department for siege guns, stating that the enemy had within his entrenchments "not less than 100,000 men, probably more," and that "here is to be fought the great battle that is to decide the existing contest," yet the way was open for the Confederates to retire to Richmond whenever they chose. He also complained of his want of men. Mr. Lincoln wrote in reply: "Your dispatches, complaining that you are not properly sustained, while they do not offend me, pain me very much." He reminds the General-in-Chief that he has with him 85,000 effective men, and *en route* enough to make 108,000, remarking: "By delay the enemy will relatively gain upon you; that is, he will gain faster by fortifications and reinforcements than you can by reinforcements alone." After further suggestions and expressions of kindness, he closed by saying—"But you must act." Time passed on, the enemy making a bold front to deceive the Union commander, and when he was ready to open with his siege guns, it was discovered one morning that the enemy were gone; their rear guard, even, was far on its way toward Richmond. The Federal gunboats passed up York river convoying transports, carrying Franklin's division to West Point, twenty-five miles above Yorktown, where it arrived the next day. This capture of Yorktown was hailed as an important victory by the people, and excited hopes of a speedy crushing of the Confederacy.

May  
4.

The Confederates, meantime, retired as best they could on account of the muddy roads, made so by a pouring rain, which continued for thirty-six hours, and halted to retard the pursuit at Williamsburg, twelve miles above Yorktown, at which place earthwork defenses had been thrown up some time before, mostly by the labor of slaves. About noon the same day the Union cavalry overtook the

Confederate army and ascertained their position, but imperfectly. The next morning early Heintzelman arrived with his division, Smith's and Hooker's divisions soon after. The latter commenced the battle at 7½ A. M. At 10 A. M. the enemy endeavored to turn the Union left, but Hooker persistently held his place, and for six hours the battle raged on this point; the mire was so deep that artillery could scarcely be handled. There was a lamentable want of coöperation among the division commanders, though General Sumner was nominally in command of the whole force, McClellan being still at Yorktown.

CHAP.  
 LX.  
 1862.  
 May  
 5.

Early in the afternoon ammunition began to fail Hooker's men. Messenger after messenger had been sent to urge on Kearney's division, which was retarded beyond precedent by the almost impassable roads. Heintzelman and Hooker held their position by bayonet charges alone; it seemed a carnage to stand any longer owing to the deficiency of ammunition. "Shall we retire?" said Heintzelman to Hooker. "No sir," said the latter; "if we must fall, let those responsible for it be made to answer; *we* cannot leave this post." "Just my views," said Heintzelman. Presently a hurrah was heard above the din; Kearney's men, begrimed with mud, were coming through the forest. Heintzelman waved his wounded arm and shouted them a welcome, and called to the musicians, "Give us Yankee Doodle, boys!" and a cheer of triumph rose along the whole line as these brave men moved to the conflict. "On to the front!" shouted Heintzelman, and Hooker, knowing the ground, led forward the brigade without a moment's delay. The enemy fell back to their earthworks. "Now for the charge, boys!" was shouted, and they carried the rifle-pits and one redoubt at the point of the bayonet. The enemy tried again and again to recover the position, but were as often repulsed.

In another part of the field were found two redoubts unoccupied; of these Generals Hancock's and Smith's divisions took possession. Soon the Confederates discovered

CHAP.  
LX.

1862.

their loss, and made an effort to recover them. Hancock feigned to retreat, and they rushed on to make an assault. The Federals, at the proper moment, wheeled and rapidly delivered several deadly volleys, and then charged upon the surprised enemy, secured 500 prisoners, and scattered the remainder. Night came on; the Union soldiers remained on the field, sleeping for the most part on the muddy ground, without shelter or food. General McClellan arrived just as the battle closed.

During the night Johnston withdrew from the Williamsburg defenses and passed over to the south side of the Chickahominy, leaving on the field his dead and badly wounded—about 1,000. Colonel Averil pursued with a cavalry force and captured a large number of prisoners. The Union army lost 456 killed and 1,400 wounded; the Confederate loss was never reported.

The exposure and labor sent a great number of the Union soldiers to the hospitals. Here is where that blessed institution, "The United States Sanitary Commission," came to the rescue of the wounded and sick soldiers. This "Commission" sprang from the benevolence of the people themselves, who cheerfully gave their money to sustain it, and ladies of the highest culture and refinement often volunteered as nurses. Tens of thousands of wounded and sick soldiers were thus aided, and received, under the circumstances, the tenderest care. The influence of that "Commission" has been felt throughout Christendom; and commissions modeled after it have blessed the poor soldiers of Europe in wars since the close of the Civil War.

Meantime, General Huger was destroying all the war material and ships, to the amount of more than ten million dollars, at the navy-yard at Gosport, preparatory to evacuating Norfolk, when Magruder would leave Yorktown. The next day Commodore Tatnal, who commanded her, gave orders to blow up the *Merrimac*. Now was the time for McClellan to change his base to the James, which he had wished to do when the "monster" was supposed to be

May  
11.

in the way. The gunboats passed up the James, silencing the hostile batteries, until they reached Drury's Bluff, eight miles below Richmond; on the Bluff was Fort Darling, so high that the shots from the gunboats passed over, while its guns were depressed so as to make plunging shots.

These advances caused a thrill of consternation in Richmond, for the citizens and the authorities thought the Union army would promptly follow up its successes. The Confederate Congress refused to remain, but adjourned, failing to manifest the proper confidence in the government or army. Even in the President's mansion was "made a painful exhibition to the South of the weakness and the fears of those entrusted with its fortunes." Preparations were made to remove the public archives to Columbia, S. C. But when it was seen that McClellan, instead of working his way up the James, turned aside to follow up the Chickahominy, some of the citizens recovered from their alarm, and held a meeting and passed resolutions "to stand by the city or lay it in ashes" before it should fall into the hands of the Federals. A strange infatuation seemed to seize the Southern leaders to destroy the property of their own people; lest towns should be occupied by Union soldiers, they would burn them. Thus Magruder had laid in ashes the beautiful village of Hampton on the approach of the Union army. They seemed to act without reason. If they succeeded in separating from the free States, their towns would be safe for themselves; and if they did not succeed, they would only come back under the old flag, when their homes and property would be as secure to their owners as they always had been. In truth, these leaders were very free with not only the property, but with the individual rights of their own people. Their conscription act was cruel in the extreme and enforced without mercy. It read: "Every male citizen between the ages of 18 and 35 is declared *by virtue of his citizenship* to be in the military service of the Confederate States." Thus, wherever found, male citizens between these ages could be put in the ranks by the officer

CHAP.  
IX.  
1862.  
May  
16.

CHAP. in command. The loyalty of the South is proved "by the  
LX. general and continued submission of the people to the  
1862. impressment system as practiced—such a tyranny, I believe, as no other high-spirited people ever endured."<sup>1</sup> In the free States, when a draft was necessary and ordered, the person thus drafted could furnish a substitute; and the people, having ascertained the quotas of their respective counties or districts, came forward of their own accord and provided the means to pay the men who entered the army; and, if they had families, pledged themselves to support them while the husband was in the field.

General Banks was in the Shenandoah Valley, his troops not exceeding 5,000; as he had been stripped of two divisions, one that of General Shields, sent to General McDowell at Fredericksburgh; the other, General Blenker's, to Fremont, in West Virginia. General Jackson was sent by Johnston, with 15,000 men, to pounce upon Banks, drive him out of the Valley, make a demonstration on Washington, and delay the movements of McClellan. General Banks had a small force stationed at Front Royal to protect the people from roving marauders; this force Jackson attacked, but, warned by a contraband, it fell back, skirmishing all the way toward Winchester, where Banks was. The latter made his arrangements, and at 2 A.M. his troops, artillery, baggage and hospital stores were on their march to the Potomac. This retreat was one continued skirmish, and some severe fighting. Banks deserves credit that, with his limited force, he brought nearly all his train and men safely across the river, and then halted to dispute the passage. Jackson did not linger, for he heard that Generals Shields and Fremont were coming to fall upon his rear, but escaped by great skill and joined Johnston, having accomplished nothing of importance, but lost by death Colonel Ashby, unquestionably the most competent commander of cavalry in the Confederate service. In a few weeks Banks was at his old post.

May  
25.

<sup>1</sup> Johnston's Narrative, p. 425.

As an evidence of the patriotism of the free States, it may be mentioned that when Mr. Lincoln called upon those near at hand for volunteers to repel Jackson and defend the capital, in a few days nearly sixty regiments reported themselves ready to march.

CHAP.  
IX.  
1862.  
May  
28.

The advance of the Union army was slow; it did not reach the Chickahominy until the 21st, when the left wing, unmolested, passed the river at Bottom's Bridge, to the South side, and the right wing remained on the North side; the whole line extending twelve miles to Cold Harbor the extreme right. Says General Barnard, chief-engineer of the Army of the Potomac: "This river, at the season we struck it, was one of the most formidable obstacles that could be opposed to the march of an army." "The stream flows through a belt of heavily timbered swamp, which averages three to four hundred yards wide;" "and the water when but a foot or two above its summer level overspreads the whole swamp."<sup>1</sup>

May  
21.

From the White House—the head quarters—on York river, supplies came on steamers. General McDowell had his division at Fredericksburg, and it was designed, if necessary, that he should join McClellan. The Union army lay in an exposed position from May 21st to the 31st, the left wing south of this dangerous river and the right north; Barnard says, the bridges and pontoons were ready; and the entire right wing of the army could have passed the river any time after the 24th. Should a storm arise, the river swamps would be impassable for either wing; for this storm the enemy waited: it came, and for two days they attacked the left wing furiously. This battle is known as that of Fair Oaks or Seven Pines, one of the most bloody contests of the war, in which both armies displayed heroic bravery. The enemy were compelled to retire, and Heintzelman and Sumner wished to march upon Richmond, only five miles distant;—in truth Heintzelman's division reached a point

May  
31  
and  
June  
1.

<sup>1</sup> Barnard's Report, p. 18.

CHAP. within four miles, but the General-in-chief would not per-  
LX. mit the movement. Heintzelman, foreseeing the peril of  
1862. having the army divided by that dangerous river, had given warning days before, of what the enemy evidently intended ; and General Sumner on his own responsibility passed the river from the north side on a temporary bridge, and by the presence of his troops the fortunes of the day were saved. These two generals handled their forces independently of each other ; there was no supreme authority on the field, as McClellan was seven miles away. The Confederate loss was about 8,000, that of the Federals about 5,000. In this battle General Johnston was severely wounded, and General Robert E. Lee was appointed in his place to the command of the Confederate army in front of Richmond.

After this battle, the Union army remained in its original position. The danger of thus separating the two wings by the river was still the same, and Lee, the new commander, did not fail to take advantage of the blunder. McClellan was still hesitating, it would seem, whether or not to change his base to the James ; he now telegraphed to the President that the enemy had 200,000 men. Says one authority, "the Confederate Capital had for its defence but 100,000 men at most." This included those in garrison in the forts around Richmond, while Childe says "on the 20th of June the army of Northern Virginia numbered 70,000 fighting men."<sup>1</sup> From June 1st to the 20th, the right wing of the Union army lay isolated on the north side of the Chickahominy ; a tempting bait which Lee laid plans to secure. "The Confederate army covered Richmond, extending from the James river, where its extreme right commenced, to the Chickahominy beyond Meadow Bridge, on which its extreme left abutted." General Huger commanded the right, General Magruder the center and General A. P. Hill the left, while the divisions of Longstreet and D. H. Hill, drawn up behind and beyond the left, were to support, at the fitting

<sup>1</sup> Life of Lee, pp. 75, 77.

moment, the turning movement of Jackson. General Lee amused McClellan by making demonstrations on his front, while Jackson, in accordance with orders, was making a long detour to attack the rear of the exposed right wing.

CHAP.  
LX.  
1862.

Meanwhile, Lee sent General James E. B. Stuart with a cavalry force to reconnoiter, which he accomplished effectively; bringing confirmation of the exposed condition of the right wing of the Union army. "The Federal forces offered the strange spectacle of an army invading a country and, although superior in numbers and resources, awaiting the attack, instead of pressing forward and engaging itself in conflict."<sup>1</sup>

June  
12.

McClellan, on the eve of June 26th, fully determined to change his base; but now Jackson was almost ready to attack his right, and it was a far different matter to move with a persistent enemy pressing on the rear than to move unobstructed. During the forty days in the marshes along the Chickahominy, his army was almost decimated by diseases thus contracted. Two days before, June 24th, a deserter brought word that Jackson was preparing to attack the Union army at Mechanicsville, on the extreme right. McClellan sent two trusty negroes to verify the deserter's story. They soon returned, reporting that the enemy's pickets were at Hanover Court House. An attack was evidently impending. At last the resolution was taken to commence changing the base to the James. In the midst of preparations to pass the river, and about 3 P.M., General D. H. Hill's division, 14,000 strong, tired of waiting to hear Jackson's attack, passed the river at Meadow Bridge, and assaulted Fitz John Porter's division at Mechanicsville. Here began the famous "seven days' contest."

June  
26.

June  
26.

General Porter, seeing the large force of the enemy, fell back to a strong position at a crossing of Beaver Creek, to which the enemy soon came up and endeavored to cross by the two bridges, but were repulsed from both, one after the

<sup>1</sup> Life of Lee, pp. 79 and 86.

CHAP. other; at 9 P. M. the battle ceased, the enemy losing "be-  
LX.  
1862. tween three and four thousand; the Federals much less."  
The way was open, and during the night Longstreet joined Hill, and both moved round Porter's right to unite with Jackson the next day, and to make an attack on McCall's division at Cold Harbor. Learning of this movement McClellan ordered by telegraph that line to be abandoned and a new one taken, extending from near and beyond Gaines' Mill, and to Powhite Swamp, thus covering the approaches to the bridges over the Chickahominy, which must be made in order to change the base. During the night heavy guns were put in position on the South side to protect the bridges, and numerous wagons were passed over. "The delicate operation of withdrawing the troops from Beaver Dam Creek was commenced shortly before daylight, and successfully executed."

General Lee joined his army in the morning, but delayed to attack till he could hear from Jackson's guns; without waiting longer he, however, began the battle at 4 P. M., and it continued till eight. The greatest bravery was displayed on both sides; at half-past five P. M. Jackson came upon the Union lines. The Federals, meanwhile, rushed and charged D. H. Hill's division, and to aid him Lee ordered Longstreet to feign an attack on the center and left of the Federal right wing. But the latter, seeing the strength of the position, found he must make a real attack if he would aid Hill's troops, and "five brigades rushed to the assault in double-quick time, but were received by a fire so terrible that they recoiled cowed." It was just after this that Jackson's troops came upon the ground.

General Porter asked for aid, and General Slocum's division crossed the river to his assistance, and also other troops were sent over. At 6 P. M. the enemy made an attempt to break the Union line, but failed. An hour later they made a still more fierce attack, and gained the woods held by the left of the Federal right wing, and the Union soldiers fell back to a hill in the rear. Darkness came on,

The enemy, having been repulsed several times, did not press their recent advantage. This battle of Cold Harbor, or Gaines' Mill, was one of the hardest conflicts of the war. "The losses of the two armies were great—from 7,000 to 8,000 on the Confederate side, and from 6,000 to 7,000 on that of the Federals." The Confederates persist in calling the movements of the subsequent days a retreat; but the Federals call it a change of base, though undertaken too late.

CHAP.  
LX.  
1862.

During the time this battle was in progress on the North side of the Chickahominy, the enemy were making demonstration on the South side, in front of Heintzelman's, Keyes' and Sumner's corps.

According to Childe the number of Confederates thus threatening amounted to only 25,000, while the number of Union soldiers held waiting was 70,000. Says Magruder in his report: "Had McClellan massed his whole force in column, and advanced it against any point of our line of battle, its momentum would have insured him success and the occupation of our works about Richmond." And Barnard says: "As it was, the enemy fought with his *whole* force (except enough left before our lines to keep up appearances), and we fought with 27,000 men." The Commander-in-Chief's movements were all interfered with by his absurd belief of the superior numbers of the enemy.

During the following night the Union troops were withdrawn from the north side of the Chickahominy; the trains, having passed over the day before, were far on their way toward the James. All the bridges over the river were blown to pieces to prevent the enemy's crossing. It is singular that not until this Friday evening did the corps commanders learn that they were to "make a flank movement to the James river."

June  
28.

To abandon strong fortifications on which they had spent twenty days of hard labor had a depressing effect on

CHAP. the soldiers, yet they bore up manfully under the disap-  
IX.  
pointment, though they had been at one time within four  
1862. miles of Richmond. Notwithstanding this depression, in  
the three succeeding battles of Savage Station, Glendale,  
White Oak Swamp and Malvern Hill, the last and most  
June important, they manifested marvelous courage and endur-  
29-30. ance. On the morning after the battle of Gaines' Mill  
July McClellan wrote to the Secretary of War a letter closing in  
1. the following singular terms: "If I save this army now, I  
tell you plainly that I owe no thanks to you, or to any  
other persons in Washington. You have done your best to  
sacrifice this army." The incompetency in leading and  
directing this unfortunate army, time has placed elsewhere  
than with the Secretary of War.

General Porter's corps rested for a few hours, then  
pressed forward toward the James, through the White Oak  
Swamp. Nearly 600 wounded men, by order of the Com-  
mander-in-Chief, were left under a flag of truce at Savage  
Station, "with a proper complement of surgeons and at-  
tendants, and a bountiful supply of rations and medical  
stores." The whole Union army withdrew, slowly and  
deliberately, and the enemy followed after, but were repulsed  
from time to time, when they made attacks, and in no in-  
stance did they in the main delay the withdrawal; for the  
corps commanders (as the Commander-in-Chief was in the  
advance) managed, under general orders, to take turns in  
repelling the enemy and holding them in check until the  
portion of the army in motion moved to a certain point,  
then those that held the opposing force in check passed on,  
while fresh troops awaited in well-chosen positions the  
approaching foe. A part of the Southern army made detours  
by taking country roads, but when they came upon the  
line of march of the Union army they found it prepared to  
meet any assault. In this withdrawal the Confederate army  
lost many more soldiers than the Federal. Finally the  
advance reached Malvern Hill, on which McClellan arranged  
to make a stand. General Franklin held "Stonewall"

Jackson in check for half a day at White Oak Swamp bridge, then at 10 P.M., without orders, but with wisdom, withdrew: General Sumner of his own will followed, then Heintzelman and then Hooker, and early in the morning they took their position on Malvern Hill. This hill, 16 miles below Richmond, "is an elevated plateau about a mile and half long by three-fourths wide, and well cleared of timber, and with several converging roads running over it." On this plateau was the Union army, center and left, right extending to cover the passage to Harrison's Landing; thither the trains had passed the night before. On the hill sixty pieces of field artillery were placed in position; and also ten siege guns. This decision to make a stand on Malvern Hill Barnard says "probably saved the army of the Potomac from destruction."

CHAP.  
LX.  
1862.

Lee, who had been laboring for days to unite his whole army that he might, as usual, attack weak points in force, now found himself in position with his entire army, 60,000 or 70,000 strong under their respective commanders. He resolved to envelope the position of the Union army, but delayed the attack till 4 P.M., as he seems not to have had his preparations made; meanwhile, the Union soldiers of their own accord were throwing up numerous earthworks to defend certain positions. The attack was made on the Union left; the Confederates advancing their batteries in an open field, in front of woods where lay the men to storm the Union lines when their batteries had silenced the Federal guns. But their own batteries were soon disabled by the well-directed fire of the Union artillery, and the storming column had no opportunity to carry out their orders. "Instead of ordering up a hundred or two hundred pieces of artillery to play on the Yankees, a single battery was ordered up and knocked to pieces in a few minutes; one or two others shared the same fate," says Hill in his report.

July  
1.

"At six o'clock General D. H. Hill, deceived by what he thought was the signal for the attack, charged with all

CHAP. his division; but finding himself unsupported, although  
 LX.  
 1862. Jackson might have hastened to his aid, he was obliged to retire with great loss. Magruder also, on the Confederate right, made an attempt which ended like Hill's. The flux and reflux of the rival armies lasted till night."<sup>1</sup> The gunboats joined in the fray, and made great havoc in the ranks of the Confederates. The Union army, according to the original design, withdrew to Harrison's Landing; and the following night Lee fell back with his shattered troops to the Richmond fortifications. This ended the seven days' fighting and fearful loss of life, and the campaign became famous as the great failure of the war. The Union loss in killed, wounded and missing was 15,349; the Confederate, 19,533.

The most numerous and best drilled army of the nation had accomplished virtually nothing. With but one exception—Williamsburg—it had never been led against the enemy, but, on the contrary, stood on the defensive. It was kept from May 25th to July 1st in the swamps along the Chickahominy, where, amid the malarious influences and the broiling sun, the men became enervated to an unprecedented degree. Yet be it said to the immortal honor of the soldiers and officers composing this army, that they fulfilled their duty to their country, and under the most trying circumstances. They in every sense were the equals of their Western fellows who had been so much more successful. Prince De Joinville says: "If their primitive organization had been better, the survivors of this rude campaign, I do not fear to assert, might be regarded as the equals of the best soldiers in the world."<sup>2</sup> "An army which was able in the midst of so many trials and disasters to continue fighting all day, and marching all night, enduring its defeats bravely and without flinching, deserves the respect and admiration of both friends and foes."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Life of Lee, p. 108.

<sup>2</sup> De Joinville's Army of the Potomac, p. 96.

<sup>3</sup> Life of Lee, p. 110.

McClellan at once asked for more men, and the government sent a sufficient number to make in the aggregate, by July 20th, 101,691 men, present for active service. The President issued a call for 300,000 more men; and he also, to secure greater efficiency, consolidated the three small armies of McDowell, Banks and Fremont, to the command of which—known as the “Army of Virginia”—he appointed General John Pope. He was directed to cover Washington, as the way was open for a Confederate march on the National Capital, and McClellan by his position could offer no obstruction to such a movement. In truth, the enemy, emboldened by his inaction, resolved to try for Washington, and at least force his recall from the James. General Halleck, at the recommendation of General Scott, was appointed “to the command of the whole land forces of the United States as commander-in-chief.” Halleck assumed command, and after a Cabinet council visited the army on the James to judge for himself whether it should be withdrawn or not. “The majority of the officers expressed themselves in favor of the withdrawal.” The men had become so weakened because of the hot weather and the malaria of the swamps that they were unfit to enter upon an advance.

CHAP.  
LX.  
1862.

July  
22.

Pope's army when he took the field amounted to 42,000 men; 5,000 of whom were cavalry—the latter somewhat inefficient from want of drill and concentration. Detachments of cavalry reconnoitered and reported the enemy in force on the Rapidan and also at Madison Court House. Pope interposed his forces between them and the National Capital. The movements of the Confederates puzzled the Union generals. Their presence was made known by an attack on General Banks. They arranged their forces in such a manner as to amount almost to an ambuscade, into which the Federals fell. At about 3 p.m. the battle began, and soon became general. At 6 o'clock Pope came upon the field and made some changes of position, which the enemy mistook for a retreat, and pressed on

July  
29.

Aug.  
9.

**CHAP.** and came into an open field and exposed themselves to a  
**LX.** very destructive fire of artillery, which drove them back to  
**1862.** their covert of scrub-oak. Night came on, and Jackson  
**Aug.** fell back and disappointed the Federals, who in the morn-  
**11.** ing expected to attack him. Jackson continued to retreat  
till he reached the south side of the Rapidan, leaving his  
badly wounded under a flag of truce. This is known as  
the battle of Cedar Mountain.

A few days afterward Pope learned, from papers found on Stuart's adjutant, who had been captured, that the plans of the enemy were to march on Washington. Halleck telegraphed an order to McClellan to bring his army from the James to Washington. The latter asked that the order might be rescinded, and an advance on Richmond made by way of Petersburg. That movement was available two months before, but it was now too late, and Halleck insisted upon the order being obeyed, and it was complied with in a tardy manner. Halleck had already ordered the wounded and sick soldiers to be brought to northern hospitals, to remove all obstructions to active operations.

At a convocation of the Governors of the loyal States it was recommended to the President to call for 300,000 more men. The people of these States, though greatly disappointed and mortified at the sad failure, nevertheless labored with their usual energy to recruit the army and sustain the Government. When Lee learned of this, and that the army of the Potomac was ordered back to its old quarters, he acted promptly, sending a force under Jackson to crush Pope's army before it could be reinforced either by the new levies or by McClellan's army. He sent forward all the troops that could be spared from the fortifications at Richmond, leaving there only the inexperienced. Pope, learning of the number of the enemy in his front, fell back from the Rapidan to the Rappahannock, at all the fords of which they were checked. Soon the great mass of the Confederate army disappeared; Jackson was making an unusual detour to reach the Shenandoah Valley and

**Aug.**  
**15.**

come in on the rear of Pope's army. The latter divined the movement and wrote to that effect to McDowell. Meanwhile, Jackson was pressing on over fields and bad roads, and appeared suddenly at Thoroughfare Gap, where the railway of Manassas Gap crosses the hills of Bull Run. Thoroughfare Gap was unoccupied, and Jackson, passing through, sent a detachment which overpowered the little garrison at Manassas Junction, and the hungry Confederates revelled in the provisions on hand at that important point. The next day, Longstreet, with his division, joined Jackson; with him came Lee, who assumed command. Pope now came up with his forces. They had been marching and countermarching for ten days to find the enemy, and were weary. His army amounted to about 54,000 men, and not more than 500 effective cavalry; Lee's army to 70,000 effective men, according to Childe's account. Pope pressed on as Jackson withdrew from the Junction, and prepared to give battle on the old Manassas ground, of July 21, 1861.

Gen. Sigel at 10 A.M. commenced the fight; the position of the enemy was well chosen behind the embankment of a railroad, and the Federal arrangements were equally as well made. The struggle was very severe during the day, and in the end was a drawn battle, though the Confederates were driven back and the Federals occupied the field. There was want of concert in the attack and movements of the Union divisions; some of them did not carry out their orders fully, as, for instance, Fitz John Porter's "forces took no part whatever in the action, but were suffered by him to lie idle on their arms, within sight and sound of the battle during the whole day." Had he come into it with his 10,000 fresh men, no doubt the victory would have been complete. This was the second time within two days that Porter had delayed or refused to obey Gen. Pope. He was afterward tried by court-martial for this conduct and severely censured.

The next day, about noon, the conflict was renewed:

CHAP. the line of battle was nearly five miles long. Porter's  
 LX.  
 1862. division now taking part and fighting bravely, and other  
 Aug. divisions, such as Heintzelman's and Reno's, maintaining  
 30. their old reputation for persistent bravery and endurance. The contest extended along the line and raged for several hours; the Confederates bringing up heavy reserves, and hurling mass after mass of troops upon the Federal left. These persistent efforts forced the left back one-half or three-fourths of a mile, but at dark they made a stand firm and unbroken. If the forces of McClellan had been at Acquia Creek by the 20th of August, as ordered, they could have easily aided in this second battle of Bull Run; but tardiness was the bane of that brave but unfortunate army; and again there was want of harmony among the commanders of division, owing, it was said, to rivalries.

Pope fell back to the intrenchments at Centerville, and within a day or two retired to the defenses of the Capital, on the way to which was the severe skirmish of Chantilly, in which two most excellent officers were killed—General Stevens and General Kearney. General Pope asked to be relieved of further service in that department. The Union losses in all these conflicts amounted to nearly 15,000 men, killed, wounded and missing; the Confederates lost between nine and ten thousand. These disasters caused the most intense excitement in the loyal States; they were altogether so uncalled for and unexpected that the people were taken by surprise. But the effect was to rouse them to greater exertions and sacrifices than ever before.

A party in the Confederacy had urged that their armies should take the offensive rather than the defensive; and such had been the policy along the line of the Western Border States; but in these their efforts had signally failed. Now the want of success of the Army of the Potomac and the withdrawal of Pope's army induced Lee of his own accord to push on his army, his vanguard crossing the Potomac at the mouth of Monocacy Creek; three days after the advance was at Frederick, Maryland.

While the Confederates were thus moving, great confusion reigned at Washington and vicinity. General McClellan, in virtue of his position in his army and by direction of the President, took command of all the forces thus demoralized in and around the capital, and displayed his remarkable talents as an organizer by soon bringing order out of confusion. The Union army in a few days was prepared to place itself between the invading foe and the capital, and also to guard Baltimore. The army moved in the direction of the enemy; Burnside led the left, Sumner the center, and Franklin the right.

CHAP.  
 LX.  
 1862.

General Lee and his officers were greatly chagrined because the people of Maryland did not hasten to join the Confederates, though Lee had issued a moving proclamation, and laid before them in expressive terms the sorrows they endured from the oppressions of the United States Government; but they—poor people—did not view it in that light.

At Harper's Ferry was General Miles with 11,500 men; he had been assured that aid would be sent him. But Lee was unwilling to leave this force in his rear, and says he, "The advance of the Federal army was so slow as to justify the belief that the reduction of Harper's Ferry would be accomplished, and our troops concentrated before they would be called on to meet it." Accordingly he sent Jackson, who moved rapidly, seized the heights that commanded the Ferry, and compelled a surrender of the garrison—the aid coming just thirty hours too late. The cavalry, however, escaped, and, on its way to join the Union army, captured an important train of wagons belonging to the enemy.

Sept.  
 15.

The Union advance entered Frederick, in which place was found an order of Lee's, dated the 9th, to his subordinate generals, fully explaining his future movements. McClellan availed himself of this information, and ordered his entire force to certain points. There are two passes or gaps through the South Mountain—name given to the Blue Ridge north of the Potomac—Crampton and Turn-

CHAP  
LX.

1862.

Sept.  
14.

er's, within five miles of each other. The former of these General Franklin was ordered to seize, which he did after a sharp conflict, and passed through into Pleasant Valley to find the enemy in force. Burnside also had reached Turner's Gap and found it held by D. H. Hill, with a strong force, and the crest of the mountain for a mile. The battle commenced by a cannonade at daylight, lasting all day. The enemy withdrew the next night, having lost about 2,500 men. They next appeared drawn up on the west side of Antietam Creek, professing to have gained their point in holding the Gap until Jackson could return from Harper's Ferry. In this battle was killed General Reno, a great loss to the Union army.

General Lee's position was very strong, with the creek in his front, Sharpsburg village one mile in his rear on the way to the Potomac, over which, in case of disaster, he could retreat. Over the creek were three stone bridges in a distance of nearly four miles. Lee's army faced east, and on his right he placed Longstreet, opposite the south bridge, then came D. H. Hill, then Hood, and then north of him, Jackson. McClellan's army faced west, and its left was opposite Longstreet and the south bridge. Here was placed Burnside's corps, then came Porter's in the centre, then Hooker's, and a portion of Sumner's on the right.

Sept.  
16.

The bridge on the Union extreme right, and also a ford, were unguarded, and in the afternoon, Hooker, in obedience to orders, crossed the bridge and ford without opposition; but Lee had placed two of Hood's brigades under cover of the woods to receive the Federals as they moved southwest toward their line, and here the combat commenced. By this time it was dark and nothing decisive was done, both parties remaining in the woods. Hood's troops were relieved by a portion of Jackson's forces, and General Mansfield crossed the Antietam and joined Hooker, while Sumner had orders to cross at daylight.

The sun rose clear and bright, and early in the morning the conflict began in earnest, Hooker taking the initiative.

The assault was made by his centre division—Pennsylvania Reserves—under General Meade. The attack was so furious that after an hour's fighting, with the aid of the batteries on the east side of the creek, the enemy were forced to give way and retreat across an open field, beyond which were woods where they took shelter. Hooker advanced his centre and left over the open field, but when they approached the woods the enemy re-formed, and being reinforced, met them in the open plain with the most determined vigor. Both equally brave, this was one of the most terrible conflicts of the war, and continued until both sides, exhausted, retired as if by mutual consent.

CHAP.  
IX.

1862.

Sept.  
17.

The Confederates had suffered greatly; several excellent officers had been slain or mortally wounded. Hooker's division had been almost broken to pieces; he called for Mansfield's division, which came on the ground about half-past 7 A. M. Meanwhile, the Confederates had been reinforced by D. H. Hill's division, which had been resting in the woods. Now commenced another bitter conflict. Hooker's broken corps and Mansfield's division were forced across the open field to the woods, and there they held their ground. The brave Mansfield was killed as he went to the front to examine the position, and Hooker, severely wounded, was carried from the field. At this time, 9 A. M., General Sumner brought up his corps, and drove one portion of the enemy back to the woods, and another portion was withdrawn. These, again reinforced, made an attack upon Sumner's right, which was much advanced, under Sedgwick, and drove it back; then the Confederates retired to a safe position in the rear at 11 A.M. Thus, between the Southern left and Union right was the conflict to which were sent reinforcements by both Lee and McClellan. Little was done by either the right or the center of the Union army in the afternoon.

Thus far nothing had been done on the Union left. At 8 A.M. Burnside had been ordered to force the lower bridge, and occupy the Sharpsburg heights; but not till 1 P.M. was

CHAP.  
LX.

1862.

the bridge carried, and not till two hours afterward were the heights captured, and without much struggle. The guns of the enemy had fully commanded the west end of the bridge; Burnside held the heights for a few hours, and then fell back to the bridge.

Sept.  
19.

The next day each army rested; McClellan was reinforced by two divisions, and Lee was satisfied to hold his position. During the following night he withdrew, and the next day crossed the Potomac unmolested. McClellan was urged by the authorities at Washington to pursue and harass the enemy while the roads were good, but he was not ready, and the golden opportunity was lost to crush Lee's army, or drive it on its way to Richmond a disorganized force.

Oct.  
1.

Finally the President visited the army himself, and was convinced that it could move as well as Lee's, and, on his return, consulting with the Secretary of War and General Halleck, he sent a peremptory order to cross the Potomac and attack the enemy, lying in the vicinity of Winchester and Martinsburg.

Oct.  
6.

Lee, emboldened by McClellan's inactivity, sent Stuart on a raid, with nearly 2,000 cavalry, into Pennsylvania. He made a complete sweep around the Union army, passing through Mercersburg, Chambersburg, and several other places, levying contributions on them all, and finally crossed the Potomac safely, scarcely losing a man.

Oct.  
10.

McClellan did not obey the order of his superior officer, the President, given October 6th, but still lingered, and the President wrote him a letter, dated October 16th, in which he says: "Are you not over-cautious when you assume that you can not do what the enemy is constantly doing? Should you not claim to be at least his equal in prowess and act upon the claim?" This expostulatory letter was written in the kindest spirit.

Oct.  
16.

McClellan at that time had an army of 130,000 men, yet he did not move, giving one excuse after another, for the most part trivial. As in the fall of the year before, he permitted the fine weather to pass without putting his

army in motion ; at length the patient President removed him from the command of the army, and ordered him to report at Trenton, N. J., his home, and appointed General A. E. Burnside to succeed him.

CHAP.  
LX.  
1862.  
Nov.  
5.

General Burnside thought it better for the army to move direct to Fredericksburg, and crossing the river, force their way to Richmond. General Halleck, Commander-in-Chief, in an interview with Burnside disapproved of the movement, but finally consented and returned to Washington with the understanding that pontoon bridges should be sent across the country to Fredericksburg for the army to pass over. The army moved at once toward that point, while the enemy were deceived by demonstrations at several places ; but when the army arrived opposite Fredericksburg the pontoons had not come ; by an inexcusable blundering the proper officers had failed to send them. The object was to seize the heights in the rear of the town, and if storms came on go into winter quarters and then in the spring push on to Richmond.

Nov.  
15.

While Burnside was waiting for the pontoons General Lee arrived with Longstreet's division, soon followed by others, and began to fortify the heights. Meanwhile, rains came and the Rappahannock was much swollen. Finally, the pontoons were laid in the afternoon, under the fire of sharpshooters and artillery. The crossings were to be made at three points the next morning, above the town, opposite and below, and the attack to follow. The crossings were made in a very heroic manner, but under great disadvantages to the Federals from the position of the enemy and their numbers, for their whole army was on those heights.

Dec.  
12.

The Federal right made a series of assaults upon the enemy's entrenched line, nearly five miles long and crowned with field artillery. The Union heavy batteries on Stafford Heights on the North side of the river could scarcely reach this entrenched line ; between this line and the river was an open space within range of a double row of rifle-pits and

**CHAP.** a strong infantry force concealed right and left. Against  
**LX.** these the Union soldiers were led ; it is marvelous that so  
**1862.** few of them were killed, and that they inflicted so much  
injury upon the Confederates. Assault after assault was  
made, and the brave Union soldiers rushed heroically into  
this arena of death. In no other instance in the war were  
Union soldiers led so recklessly. Night came on and the  
conflict closed. Only about 25,000 of Lee's troops were  
engaged, and they behind entrenchments. Two days  
passed without any special movement being made by either  
army, except the Federal batteries on Stafford Heights kept  
up a cannonade on the enemy's entrenchments. The next  
night came on a violent storm, during which Burnside  
skillfully withdrew his army to the North side of the  
Rappahannock. The Confederates lost 4,101 killed and  
wounded, and the Union army 10,233.

**Dec.**  
**15.**

## CHAPTER LXI.

### LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

**Invasion of Kentucky.—Buell's March.—Battle of Perryville.—Battle of Iuka.—Preliminary Proclamation.—Opposition; the Effect.—The Slave's Hope.—Battle of Murfreesboro.—Confederate Failures.—Expedition up the Yazoo.—Capture of Fort Hindman.—Galveston Occupied.—President's Message.—Finances.—Northern Industries.—Confederate Finances.—Battle of Chancellorville.—Death of Stonewall Jackson.—Withdrawal of the Army.**

WE return to the West. The Union army took possession of Corinth, on the Memphis and Charleston Railway. The same day General Halleck sent the Army of the Ohio under General Buell toward Chattanooga, an important strategic position on the same road in East Tennessee, two hundred miles east of Corinth; he also ordered General Grant to protect West Tennessee, and to operate from Memphis against Vicksburg. Buell was to pass along the road, put it in repair, and by that route receive his supplies. General O. M. Mitchel had previously held a portion of the same road, and had advanced into North Alabama, occupying Decatur and Florence, and General G. W. Morgan had also seized Cumberland Gap, the gate of East Tennessee.

These commands, when united with Buell's force, amounted to about 40,000 men—not half enough to accomplish what was required. In truth, these commands were depleted to augment the army around Washington. Meanwhile, the Confederates planned to cause Buell's withdrawal

CHAP.  
LXI.  
1862.

May  
30.

**CHAP.** from his position. They determined to pass to his rear,  
**LXI.** invade Kentucky, threatening both Cincinnati and Louis-  
**1862.** ville, and force him to return for the latter's protection. And General Bragg, who had superseded Beauregard, and General Kirby Smith, with about 50,000 men, invaded Southeastern Kentucky and advanced toward the Ohio, pillaging as they went; while John Morgan and Forrest, each having about 1,500 cavalry, were riding and driving in every direction, plundering villages in the same region, defeating small parties of Union men, and destroying bridges. Buell was ordered to cross the State of Tennessee and meet these forces, and drive them out of Kentucky. He moved from North Alabama as speedily as possible, and came into the State three days behind Bragg, who had made a push from Glasgow toward Louisville to find General Nelson prepared to repel him, and he prudently fell back to Bardstown to unite with Kirby Smith, lest Buell should overtake him. The latter arrived at Louisville, and as soon as possible went in pursuit, thus interfering very much with the enemy's plans of carrying off plunder, for which they had impressed all the wagons, mules, horses, and slaves of the country. They found they must fight, and they made a stand at Perryville. Buell came up and a severe battle was fought, with various success during the day, but at the close the Federals had a decided advantage and made preparations to attack the enemy vigorously in the morning; but during the night the Confederates left their position and fell back to Harrodsburg. Thence Bragg continued his retreat from the State, disappearing through Cumberland Gap, to reappear in Middle Tennessee, in the vicinity of Murfreesboro, some months afterward. Buell was relieved of his command and General Rosecrans appointed to succeed him. He was of the over-cautious school; a most excellent disciplinarian, but failed sometimes to make a dash.

Sept. 26.

Oct. 8.

Oct. 30.

The failure of Bragg and Smith in Kentucky caused the greatest chagrin throughout the Confederacy. Their

programme had been to recover Kentucky and drive the Federals out of West Tennessee and reoccupy Fort Donelson. This plan was sadly interfered with, first at Iuka, Miss., where Rosecrans defeated Sterling Price and captured 1,000 prisoners; and the same Union general treated the Confederates still more severely at Corinth. In this fight the enemy, under Generals Van Dorn, Price, Lovel, and Rust, had about 38,000 men, according to their own estimate; the Union force was about half that number. They retreated in haste, leaving on the field their dead, 1,423; wounded, 5,692; and prisoners, 2,248; the Union loss was only 315 killed and 1,812 wounded. So dissatisfied were the authorities at Richmond that General Van Dorn was relieved and John C. Pemberton appointed to succeed him.

CHAP.  
LXI.  
1862.

Sept.  
20.

Oct.  
4.

After the battle of Antietam the President issued, on September 22d, a preliminary Proclamation of Emancipation of slaves belonging to those engaged in the Confederacy, to take place January 1, 1863, unless the States thus engaged should be "in good faith represented in the Congress of the United States by members chosen thereto at elections wherein a majority of the qualified voters of such State shall have participated." This "shall be deemed conclusive evidence that such State and the people thereof have not been in rebellion against the United States." Here was an offer to the Southern States to lay down their arms within one hundred days, and save their slaves. But the same infatuation still prevailed; they would make no concessions; encouraged by the hope that the people of the free States would become divided on the question of emancipation, and in the end they would secure a separation from the Union.

Sept.  
22.

This was pre-eminently a war measure; for the slaves laboring by thousands on Southern fortifications, or cultivating the fields at home while their masters were in the Confederate army, were as useful to the Southerners as if they were soldiers in their army itself; and the slave became as

CHAP. "contraband" of war, as a horse used to draw artillery on  
LXI. the field of battle, or carry a trooper on his raids.  
1862.

The opposition made in the North to this measure strengthened the hands of the leaders of the Confederacy immensely, and served to prolong the contest. It was confidently asserted that this offer of freedom would lead to insurrections and massacres, rapine and outrage, on the part of the slaves; all of which was utterly disproved by the events that followed. Those who had prophesied these direful things had taken the San Domingo insurrection with its untold horrors as a type; these negroes were virtually savages, great numbers of whom were natives of Africa itself, stolen thence and consigned to slavery; having been deprived of the sweets of liberty, they felt more keenly the contrast than if they had always been in servitude. With the slaves of the South it was far different. They, indeed, longed for liberty, but they looked for it through the intervention of others; they drew their hopes from the case of the Israelites led from Egypt by the hand of Moses; they trusted God would come to their aid in a similiar way—raise up for them a Moses; and in this trust in Providence their faith was marvelous. The gospel of forgiveness had been preached to them by preachers both of the white race and their own, and the truths of the Bible, thus orally presented, had a wonderful influence in preparing them for the events about to follow. Nor must we think they were entirely unaware of the discussions on the subject of slavery and their own freedom which for so many years had agitated the country. The discussions on political subjects at their masters' tables were carefully treasured up by the reticent slave in waiting, and as carefully related to his fellows outside, and they communicated the same from one to another in a remarkable manner. The people of the South owe the deepest gratitude to the slaves for their wonderful moderation under the circumstances; it is the highest credit to their humanity and kindly disposition that they committed no outrages on the families left under

their protection, but with few exceptions labored in good faith for their support.

CHAP.  
LXI.

1862.

When Bragg retreated from Kentucky, he took a long detour by way of Chattanooga to invade Middle Tennessee. General Rosecrans gradually moved in the same direction, sending forward several divisions of his army to Nashville. It was ascertained the invaders were concentrating south of that city in the vicinity of Murfreesboro, and that they had taken position on the west side of Stone River, a crooked stream whose general course is from the south toward the north. General Rosecrans, after many maneuvers to learn the enemy's position, made his arrangements to fall upon the right of the Confederates with a force sufficient to crush and drive them back upon their center. A citizen of the neighborhood was captured and brought to General McCook, who commanded the Federal right. The citizen said the enemy were *massing* their men on their left; it was not possible for want of time to verify the statement. General McCook, in reply to a question of Rosecrans, thought he could hold his position for three hours. In the morning these masses of the enemy rushed upon Rosecrans' right—McCook's position. Bragg had learned the plan of battle designed by the Union commander, or it may have been a coincidence. Rosecrans had advanced to fall upon the enemy's right, when he was arrested by the noise of a severe fight upon his own right; and soon came a messenger from McCook, stating that he had been attacked by overpowering forces, was pressed and needed assistance. Rosecrans answered: "Tell him to contest every inch of ground. If he holds them, we will swing into Murfreesboro with our left and cut them off." Soon, however, it was evident to Rosecrans that he must change his original plan and hasten to sustain his own right, which had already been driven, though sullenly, some distance. The Confederates came upon the troops under Sheridan. Here he displayed that remarkable promptness and skill which he

Dec.  
15.Dec.  
31.

CHAP. afterward so often showed. The enemy advanced across  
LXI. an open field and in compact mass. Upon them he trained  
1862. three batteries with terrific effect, yet they closed their ranks and pressed on to within fifty yards or so of the woods in which the Union infantry lay under cover, when suddenly the latter rose to their feet and poured in such destructive volleys that they broke and fled. General Sill charged and drove them across the field and until they found shelter in their entrenchments. In this charge the gallant Sill lost his life.

Other divisions moved against Sheridan's position, but he undauntedly changed his front and repelled them. In an hour's time came another assault, for which he prepared by planting his batteries to sweep the advancing columns. Twice more he was assaulted, but repelled the enemy with great loss. It was now three hours since the battle began, and Rosecrans came on the field. New dispositions were made by both armies, and severe fighting occurred at different points. Finally the Confederates made their last assault, to find themselves subjected to so destructive an artillery fire that when within three hundred yards they broke and hastily retired to their entrenchments. This ended the conflict of that day. The armies lay watching each other for two days. A sharp skirmish occurred on the second, in which the rebels were worsted. The following night Bragg led off his disappointed army toward the South. Every attempt the Confederates had made of an aggressive character had totally failed from Antietam to Murfreesboro. The influence of this battle was very discouraging to the leaders of the Confederacy, and even more to their people. The Union army engaged amounted to 43,400 and Bragg's about 60,000. The Union loss, killed and wounded, 8,778; the Confederate loss more than 10,000 killed and wounded, and 1,700 prisoners.

1863.  
Jan.  
2.

General Grant, whose headquarters were at Memphis, was directing his efforts to open the Mississippi; his special

object for that purpose was the reduction of Vicksburg, the "Gibraltar of the Confederacy." In the latter part of November he set out with an army to take Vicksburg in the rear by capturing Jackson—forty-six miles east—the capital of the State, while Sherman was to pass down the river from Memphis in transports and steamers convoyed by Porter's gunboats, then up the Yazoo to a certain point, and there land and make a junction with Grant's forces. The latter moved by way of Holly Springs, which place the enemy evacuated on his approach; he passed on to find them drawn up for battle on the other side of the Tallahatchie river. He flanked them and they fell back to Abbeville, out of which they were driven; the column moved on to Oxford. There he halted for an accumulation of supplies at Holly Springs, but Van Dorn, with his cavalry, surprised the regiment guarding these supplies and most effectually destroyed them. The destruction of these stores necessitated Grant to fall back and give up that plan of attack.

CHAP.  
LXI.  
1863.

1862.  
Dec.  
2.

Dec.  
20.

But Sherman, not aware of this mishap, passed twelve miles up the Yazoo and found the Confederates in force at Hayne's Bluff, a strongly fortified place, and commanding the river and any approach by land. Instead of the coöperation of Grant, Sherman found the enemy's entire force free to oppose him on the Yazoo. He made a vigorous attack, but so amply were they prepared to repel any force that he was compelled to withdraw, sustaining a loss of nearly 2,000 men; retiring down to the Mississippi, and opposite the mouth of the Yazoo at Young's Point and Milliken's Bend, the army was concentrated twelve miles above Vicksburg. Grant took his forces from Memphis down the river to the same place.

Dec.  
20.

While waiting for Grant and his forces, General McClelland, who was in temporary command, captured Fort Hindman, at Arkansas Post, fifty miles from the mouth of that river. The expedition was well planned; the troops being on board steamers, Porter convoyed them with his

1863.  
Jan.  
11.

CHAP.  
LXI.

1863.

gunboats and rams. The troops landed three miles below the Fort and invested it as soon as possible, while Porter passed up to close range; the conflict was sharp and decisive; soon a white flag appeared, the fort was surrendered and with it all the war material and 5,000 prisoners.

Feb.  
2.

General Grant arrived at Young's Point with his forces and assumed command, and in due time prosecuted his designs against Vicksburg.

1863.  
Dec.  
16.

General Banks sent a force from New Orleans to recover and occupy Baton Rouge. The garrison withdrew up the river to Port Hudson, soon to become fortified to such a degree as to be second only to Vicksburg. He also sent an expedition to occupy Galveston, Texas, under the protection of the gunboats. The force landed and took possession.

1863.  
Jan.  
1.

The Confederates made an attack by land and by water with three powerful rams. The *Harriet Lane* was captured, her commander, Wainwright, being killed. The *Westfield*, the flag-ship, was aground and prepared to be blown up, but as Commander Renshaw, the last to leave, was stepping off she prematurely blew up, killing that most efficient officer.

1863.  
Dec.  
1.

Congress assembled, and in his annual message President Lincoln proposed compensation for slaves freed under certain restrictions; that those who were not opposed to the Government should be thus compensated; that slaves once freed by the contingency of war should never be reduced to servitude. This message the Southern leaders either passed over in silence or published garbled extracts, accompanied with sneers of contempt. The mass of the people were not permitted to see the whole message.

1863.  
Jan.  
1.

On January 1, 1863, President Lincoln, in accordance with his pledge, unless the insurgents should lay down their arms, issued his final decree of Emancipation. From its results this has become famous as a landmark of human progress. He closed by saying: "Upon this act, sincerely believed to be an act of justice, warranted by the Constitution upon grounds of military necessity, I invite the con-

siderate judgment of mankind, and the gracious favor of Almighty God." This decree was hailed with enthusiasm in the free States by those who desired the Confederacy to be suppressed unconditionally, but was proclaimed by those who wished in some way to stop the Civil War, even by a compromise with an armed foe, as unconstitutional, and all that. The converse of this was, that it was constitutional for the Confederates to use their slaves to aid them in resisting the Government in its legitimate authority. Now there is scarcely an individual, even in the former Slave States, but looks upon the abolition of the system as a great blessing to the South, as well as to the whole nation.

No one in passing through the free States at this time, and seeing the industrial activity, would have suspected that the nation was engaged in civil war, at the cost of more than a million of dollars a day, and more than five hundred thousand men withdrawn from the active duties of life. A tariff higher than usual had been imposed on imports to meet, to some extent, these extraordinary expenses, and the people entered upon manufacturing industries with unprecedented zeal, and the busy hum of work was heard over the land. These resources were, however, insufficient to defray the enormous expenses, and Congress authorized the emission of United States notes, known as greenbacks, to the amount of \$150,000,000, and also bonds to the amount of \$500,000,000; the latter bearing interest at the rate of six per cent. These were offered in small sums to the people at large, and they came forward with wonderful unanimity to aid in the cause by furnishing the sinews of war. Nothing was more astonishing than what might be called the reserved resources of the free States.

Taxes—for the emergency—were imposed upon incomes and manufactures. Thus, what was lost by the falling off of import duties was more than gained by domestic taxes. And, what was still more beneficial, the people had employment in the introduction of new industries, or the more extensive prosecution of the old. Taxes were imposed—

CHAP. paid by stamps—on bonds, mortgages, deeds, and numerous commercial transactions. These onerous taxes were repealed or lightened as soon as the Government could afford it. In some instances, foreign manufacturers found it for their pecuniary interest to transfer their machinery and works to this country, thus increasing opportunities of employment to our own working people. After the suspension of specie payments the premium on gold rose and fell, and thus interfered very much with the regular prices of merchandise and of wages.

It is well to glance at the condition of the Confederacy at this time. Their debt was already six hundred million dollars, this was the amount of their scrip afloat, which the people were compelled to take in exchange for what the government wanted. This scrip was only payable on the contingency of a separation from and peace with the United States. A very heavy direct tax was levied upon the country, to defray current expenses, and to furnish a redemption fund for the scrip to be redeemed at the rate of one dollar for three, thus repudiating two-thirds of their debt. Of their efforts to obtain a foreign loan every one utterly failed; their cotton and tobacco could not be exported because of the blockade, and for the same reason English blockade runners could not come in, while so many of them had been captured with their valuable cargoes that they almost gave up the attempt.

Jan. General Burnside at his own request was relieved of his  
26. command of the Army of the Potomac, and General Joseph Hooker entered upon his duties as his successor. This was an experiment to find the right man, and as the soldiers characterized Hooker as "Fighting Joe," it was hoped he would be successful. There was great want of harmony among the officers of this unfortunate army—for which the soldiers were not to blame—unjust criticism by subordinates in respect to superiors, and lack of cheerful and prompt obedience to orders. A great many changes of officers, and also dismissals, were made in order to secure obedience and

competency. The army was reorganized; an important change was made in the increase and drilling of the cavalry force, which numbered 12,000; and the entire army, when ready to take the field, 120,000. It was still opposite Fredericksburg; and Lee kept guard at the fords of the Rappahannock for twenty-five miles, holding a very defensive position. He had sent Longstreet with 24,000 men to guard the approach to Richmond by the James river, he himself having 47,000 effective men; but their defensive position made them equal to three times that number.

Hooker, finding the fords in front well guarded, resolved to pass up the river twenty-seven miles, and there cross and move rapidly to Chancellorsville—eleven miles southwest from Fredericksburg—a country inn where four important roads meet. The army moved rapidly, and on the second day passed over on pontoon bridges laid for the purpose. The march to Chancellor's commenced at once; they came to the Rapidan at a place where the water was about four feet deep; they did not delay for pontoons, but stripping by divisions plunged in, and, carrying their clothes and arms and rations above the water, passed over, and clothing themselves in the same order were soon on the move. The crossing continued all night long, and in the morning all were safely over. The afternoon of the same day they arrived at Chancellor's. The forces there were surprised and driven back toward Lee's main army, and an advanced position of great importance was secured by General Sykes' regulars, from which he was ordered back—a grievous error, as it afterward proved. Thus far all had been successful in their movements, and Hooker, over-sanguine, exclaimed: "The rebel army belongs to the army of the Potomac!" Other divisions were signaled and passed the Rappahannock on pontoons with but little opposition and marched toward Chancellor's. General Sedgwick had, according to orders, crossed below Fredericksburg and made demonstrations on the Confederates' extreme right.

Lee, perceiving this latter to be a feint, left 6,000 men

CHAP.  
LXI.  
1862.

Apr.  
27-29.

CHAP. to guard the fortifications, and hastened with all the force  
LXI. he could muster to Chancellorsville. On the march he met  
1863. "Stonewall" Jackson, who proposed to make a long detour

May  
2.

and come in on the extreme right of the Union army. Early in the morning he set out with 22,000 veterans in a direction that induced the Union scouts to think he was falling back toward Richmond. Lee, meantime, with only 13,000 men, kept Hooker's attention by making feints at different points during the day, while Jackson was moving rapidly round to the rear of the Union army. There is certainly no excuse for Hooker and his officers to be thus deceived by this usual maneuver of Jackson. At eight P. M. the latter fell with unexampled fury upon the Eleventh Corps, General Sigel, which was completely surprised and driven back upon the Twelfth Corps. Darkness came on, and the enemy was checked by some earthworks hastily thrown up, and by the persistent cannonade into the woods kept up by the Federals. Jackson wished to make a night attack, and gave orders to that effect. Not wishing to trust any one, he himself, with a few attendants, went forward to reconnoiter, leaving directions to his soldiers not to fire unless they saw cavalry approaching from the side of the Federals. He was returning, when a brigade of his own men fired by mistake, and he fell mortally wounded. A few days later he died. General J. E. B. Stuart was appointed to the command of his division.

May  
3.

Both armies prepared for the struggle of the next day. Sedgwick obtained possession of Fredericksburg and moved toward Chancellor's. Hooker's lines were now in a position that rendered his superiority of numbers unavailable for a general battle because of dense thickets of scrub-oak. Fighting in certain points continued through the day, and Lee himself, taking four brigades from in front of Hooker, forced Sedgwick back, though his troops suffered much from the Federal artillery. Sedgwick was compelled to recross the river. For three hours there was no responsible head to the army, as Hooker when on the

piazza of the inn—his headquarters—was stunned by a piece of falling timber knocked down by a cannon-ball from a hostile battery. It is now well known there were a number of inexcusable blunders which made this battle more a disaster than a defeat. A council of war was held at Hooker's headquarters. Generals Meade, Reynolds, and Howard wished to advance and fight it out; Slocum was not present, and Couch and Sickles thought it prudent to withdraw. It was decided by Hooker to withdraw, and during the night, in the midst of rain and darkness, the army passed safely to the north bank of the Rappahannock. The Union army lost in killed and wounded about 11,000 and the Confederates about 10,000. The disappointment of the loyal people of the country at this disaster was exceedingly great.

CHAP.  
LXI.  
1863.

May  
4.

Hooker, when about to move, sent a large co-operating cavalry force under Stoneman around the enemy's army to destroy railroads and bridges, and to cut lines of communication between Lee's position and Richmond. This raid, though not fully completing the orders given, did an immense amount of harm to railways; and a portion under Kilpatrick passed entirely around Richmond to Gloucester on the James, and joined the army at Fredericksburg.

May  
8.

## CHAPTER LXII.

### LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Lee's Advance North.—Hooker's Movements.—Confederates Across the Potomac.—Gen. Meade in Command.—Battle of Willoughby Run.—Death of Reynolds.—Battle of Gettysburg.—Lee's Defeat.—Vicksburg.—Running the Gauntlet.—Victories.—Vicksburg Captured.—Port Hudson Captured.—Grierson's Raid.—Naval Expedition.—Capture of the Atlanta.—The Draft and Riot.—French Protestant Address.—Colored Soldiers.

CHAP. LXII.  
1863. THE cry "On to the North" was heard on all sides in Richmond. General Lee coincided in this view; his army was out of provisions, and it is said that on one of the requisitions to the Commissary-general the latter wrote: "If General Lee wants rations, let him go and get them in Pennsylvania." Another reason was to compel Hooker to withdraw his army to defend Washington. Childe, in his life of Lee, enumerates among the encouragements, that the Emancipation Proclamation "had exasperated the Democratic party, who complained bitterly that all Constitutional liberties were disappearing;" and also great hopes were entertained from the influence of the "Friends of peace." "The victories of Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville had filled the South with joy and confidence." "If Lee's cannon had thundered at the gates of Washington or Philadelphia, the 'Peace party' in the North would have felt sufficiently strong to intervene in an efficacious manner, and it would have been impossible for the strife to continue."<sup>1</sup>

Hooker was vigilant and felt assured that the enemy

Life of Lee, pp. 220, 227.

were moving toward the Potomac; this information he sent to Washington, and asked permission to attack their rear, but the request was refused. At length Hooker took up his line of march toward Washington, and the 50,000 men under Longstreet in his front hastened to join Lee and the advance; their army numbered 70,000 effective men, 10,000 of whom were cavalry: by far the best of their armies in discipline.

CHAP.  
XLII.  
1863.

Hooker by skillful reconnoitering discovered the movements of Lee's army, and in a cavalry skirmish Pleasanton obtained papers at Stuart's quarters which revealed the intentions of Lee: this information Hooker at once sent to Halleck's quarters at Washington. Meanwhile, the Confederate advance under Ewell was rapidly and secretly moving down the Shenandoah Valley, marching seventy miles in three days. They surprised Gen. Milroy at Winchester and compelled him to retreat; he finally reached the Potomac and passed over, losing on the way about 4,000 prisoners. Milroy would not have been surprised if Halleck had telegraphed to him the news of the enemy's advance, which was known at his headquarters several days before.

June  
9.

The movements of the two armies were nearly the same as the autumn before; Lee, moving down the valley and crossing the Potomac, and Hooker, conducting his march with great prudence, keeping between him and the National Capital; they moved in parallel lines, watching each other carefully. Bands of Confederate cavalry in force had cut the Baltimore and Ohio railway at important points, and had passed across Maryland by way of Hagerstown to Chambersburg, Pa., seizing cattle, horses, sheep, and sending trains of wagons laden with plunder across the Potomac. This continued almost unmolested for two weeks. The Governors of the States of Maryland, Pennsylvania and West Virginia issued proclamations calling for the people to turn out and repel the invaders, and so did President Lincoln.

June  
14.

CHAP.  
LXII.  
1863.

The advance of Lee's army under General Ewell crossed the Potomac at Williamsport and Shepherdstown, passing on to Chambersburg, and thence to York. Two days afterward the divisions of Longstreet and Hill crossed at the same places, and finally the whole army was reunited at Chambersburg. Hooker crossed the river at Edwards ford and moved to Frederick. Hooker now desired to send a strong force to unite with the troops at Maryland Heights, and take possession of the Potomac ferries in the rear of Lee, and thus cut off his communications and seize the laden trains continually passing south, but Halleck, the General-in-Chief, disapproved of the measure, as he usually did of the suggestions of the commanders in the field, who were presumed to know the situation better than any General in his office at Washington. Hooker, irritated at the refusal, sent in his resignation, which was accepted, and Major-General George G. Meade was appointed to succeed him.

June  
25.

June  
28.

General Meade did not change the arrangements of his predecessor, nor were operations delayed longer than one day. The troops on Maryland Heights were directed to join the army. In consequence of the interception of a letter from Jefferson Davis to Lee it became known that no movement could be made direct on Washington from Richmond, and from the defenses of the former troops were forwarded to Meade. The Federal army marched up the Monocacy Valley toward Gettysburg, Kilpatrick's cavalry in the advance.

June  
29.

Meanwhile Lee had heard of Hooker's judicious plan to seize his line of retreat, and he suddenly fell back, as he was marching on Harrisburg, to secure a position east of the South Mountain. Up to this time he was not aware that the Union army had crossed the Potomac, and was in ignorance of its movements. He at once recalled Ewell from York and Carlisle, and ordered Longstreet and Hill to concentrate their divisions at Gettysburg, toward which village both armies were approaching, each ignorant of the intentions of the other.

General Buford, with a division of Federal cavalry, was the first to enter the village. He learned of the approach of the Confederates. This information he at once sent to Meade. General Reynolds, with the First and Eleventh Corps, was only four miles distant from the town, and had orders to occupy it the next morning. General Meade's headquarters were at Taneytown, thirteen miles distant; and at intervals for about twenty miles several corps of Union troops were on their way. General Buford, with his division of cavalry, moving out of town, had taken a defensive position on Willoughby Run, a little stream two miles northward of the village and beyond Seminary Hill. General Hill learned from scouts that Federal cavalry occupied the town, and in the morning moved to drive them out, when his advance found an unexpected resistance. Buford determined at all hazards to hold the position till General Reynolds, with his forces, could come to his assistance, which he did at 10 A. M. Reynolds had no orders to bring on a battle, but there was no alternative, and putting himself at the head of his division he hastened on, and sent back orders for the Third and Eleventh Corps to come forward with all haste. He took position on Seminary Hill in front of the town, lest it should be destroyed by shells. The artillery was under General Doubleday. General Reynolds, when directing the position of the last brigade on the right, was killed by a stray bullet—a sad loss to the army and the country. General Doubleday then directed the battle, which now began in great earnest. An entire Confederate brigade crossed Willoughby run and drove Buford back, but in turn were themselves repulsed and captured, with their commander, General Archer. A Mississippi brigade was coming in on the right flank and nearly captured a battery, when the Federals changed front and at once charged bayonets. The Mississippians, thus suddenly attacked, were thrown into confusion and sought refuge in the cut of an unfinished railway, and were soon forced to surrender.

CHAP.  
LXII.

1863.

June  
30.July  
1.

CHAP.  
LXII.  
1863.

Lee's orders had been so admirably obeyed that Ewell coming from Carlisle on the north, Early from York on the east, and Hill from Chambersburg on the west, all reached Gettysburg at intervals on the same day, July 1st.

General Hill, early in the morning, had put in line of battle 14,000 men, besides his advance, Heth's division. At noon the Union army had decidedly the advantage. Ewell, who heard the roar of battle ten miles distant, hurried forward, and came upon the field at 1 P.M. He at once prepared to assault the Federal left flank, and Hill to renew the fight in front. After the fight had commenced, suddenly Early appeared on the other side, and made an impetuous charge on the Eleventh Corps, which had come up an hour or two before. These accessions to the Confederate army gave it the superiority of numbers, and thus pushed on three sides, and thrown into confusion, the Union forces—from necessity too much extended—were driven back through the village.

General Howard, when he reached the battle field at 1 P.M. with his corps, the Eleventh, assumed command. In coming up he prudently stationed one of his divisions in reserve on Cemetery Ridge, a commanding position south of Gettysburg. This division checked the advance of the enemy, and enabled the Federal troops to rally in order to receive the attack of the now exultant Confederates. The wounded Union soldiers were sent during the day to the village, and, of course, they fell into the hands of the enemy when they obtained possession. Thus ended the battle of July 1st.

General Lee had not yet arrived, but sent orders to Hill to pursue to the utmost. Early wished to assault the heights immediately; but Ewell and Hill, seeing the position strong and the Union soldiers prepared, thought it more prudent to await the morning, when their other forces could come up. When Lee arrived he found that Hill had recalled the troops.

News of the death of Reynolds had been sent to Meade,

who directed Hancock to take command ; he arrived near the close of the battle, and did much to restore order and place the troops in a position almost impregnable. As the Union troops came up during the night they were arranged along Cemetery Ridge, directly south of the village, the south end of which was terminated by two knobs known as little Round Top and Round Top. Both of these were occupied in force. In front of the former was extended the Third Corps, under General Daniel Sickles, 1,100 yards in advance on a slight elevation—a mistake which Meade discovered too late to remedy before the enemy, seeing their advantage, made the assault.

CHAP.  
LXII.  
1863.

On the other hand, Lee, who thought to choose his own ground, had to arrange his men to meet the dispositions of his adversary. More than half the day passed without demonstrations except an artillery duel ; Meade was waiting for the enemy to begin the conflict. About 4 P.M., without sending forward skirmishers, lest they should give notice of his coming, Longstreet with his entire force made a tremendous assault on the advanced position of Sickles, extending his lines to overlap the latter, and by a rush forward seize Little Round Top, the key to the whole position. Just at that moment Sykes's Corps, which had been held in reserve, were moving by order of Meade to occupy the same key. They had scarcely reached their line on the top when the Confederates, having passed round Sickles's left, came rushing up the slope to find themselves confronted with the most determined courage. Here occurred a most desperate hand to hand struggle. It resulted in the repulse of the assailants.

July  
2.

Longstreet's attack on Sickles's corps was more successful ; the soldiers fought well, but their faulty position gave the advantage to their adversaries. Sickles was severely wounded and carried from the field, General Birney taking the command.

A gap of nearly half a mile north of Round Top was made in the Union lines by the sending of reinforcements.

CHAP. The Confederates made an effort to secure this opening,  
 LXII.  
 1863. but were beaten off by the Federals sent to occupy the same place, and who reached it first. Then the Confederates made a long detour and came out in the rear of Round Top, with the hope of suddenly securing that important point, but to their dismay they saw its crest crowned with soldiers and cannons. The Fifth and Sixth Corps, fresh troops, had a few minutes before occupied the top. The latter just arrived, having marched thirty-six miles at a quick step. To attack such a position was madness, and the enemy fell back disappointed, and bivouacked in a neighboring wheat field.

Opposite the Union right was stationed Ewell, who only made demonstrations, which Meade soon detected; but about six P.M. he made a real assault against a portion of Cemetery Ridge, and captured and held a breastwork partially manned, most of the troops having been withdrawn. Three of Early's brigades attacked another portion of the same, and succeeded in driving back the unfortunate Eleventh Corps, though the artillery made sad havoc in their approaching lines. Their triumph was short, for the Second Corps fell upon them with determined vigor, and drove them off faster than they had the Eleventh.

The Confederates attributed the failure of the day to the want of united action on the part of their officers in command. Darkness ended the afternoon's work; the Confederates confessing they had "obtained no serious advantage." This ended the battle of July 2d.

July 3. Lee made no change in his general plan, but hoped on the morrow to have perfect concert of action among his own troops. During the night General Pickett brought him his division—4,000 fresh soldiers, yet he was doomed to see his plans frustrated. General Slocum before dawn attacked the Confederates in the breastwork, though they had been reinforced by three brigades, and, after a severe contest of some hours, drove them out with great loss. Finding it impossible to regain the position lost, Lee changed his plan,

and determined to assail the Federal center on Cemetery Ridge, and by two P.M. his arrangements were completed. In front of Longstreet's and Hill's troops he placed 115 guns on Seminary Hill, hoping to disable the opposite Federal guns and then carry Cemetery Ridge by assault. General Meade penetrated the design, and made counter preparations by placing only 80 guns in position for want of room, as he had 120 more on hand to replace those disabled. Then followed a most terrible combat of field artillery. The Confederate guns accomplished but little, though they kept up an unceasing fire of two hours, as the Union troops were under excellent cover. General Hunt, Chief of Artillery, purposely slackened his fire in order to save ammunition, but Lee thought it was because of the great number of disabled guns in the Federal lines, and he made preparation to carry the Ridge by assault. About four P.M. from the west of Seminary Hill appeared the lines of the Confederates moving to the attack, with a steadiness most remarkable. In the center was Pickett's division, the finest troops of the Confederate army, supported right and left by the fine divisions of Pettigrew and Wilcox. The assailing column altogether numbered 13,000 bayonets. They had 1,300 yards of plain and rolling land to pass over to reach the Federal lines, all the way under the fire of batteries on Cemetery Ridge. As they advanced the supports right and left began to waver, the left falling back, and the right, not keeping up, finally melted away. Still the Pickett column moved on, closing up their ranks as the men fell, "its flanks exposed to an oblique fire from right and left, and the head of the column torn by bombshells and grape shot; but nothing could arrest it."<sup>1</sup> The incessant fire caused it to swerve to the left instead of direct upon the point intended; presently they came within musket range, the Federals reserving their fire for more deadly effect. The column pressed on without taking time to return the fire, which had been delivered upon their left;

CHAP.  
LXII.  
1863.

<sup>1</sup> Life of Lee, p. 248.

CHAP. LXII. when they came within two hundred yards, they were received by a severe fire from two divisions, this they returned, and then rushed on, but soon a portion of the column broke in disorder; fifteen of its colors were captured and nearly 2,000 prisoners; another portion swerved to their right and took possession of a stone wall a little way in advance of the main breastworks; this wall had been hastily constructed and used temporarily; on this they placed the blue flag of Virginia—for Pickett's 4,000 were Virginians, and brave fellows too—a small success very dearly bought. They became a center of fire—front, right and left—in a few minutes; they threw down their arms, and fell upon the earth to escape the leaden hail; twelve stands of colors and about 2,500 prisoners were taken.

This virtually ended the battle of Gettysburg, when the Confederacy received a blow from which it never recovered. "The Confederate soldiers returned in a mob, pursued by the growling of hostile cannon, which swept all the valley and the slopes of Seminary Hill with balls and shells." Lee exclaimed to an English officer who was present: "This has been a sad day for us, Colonel,—a sad day—but we can't always expect to gain victories."<sup>1</sup>

July 4. Both armies remained in their respective positions; Meade was prudent and Lee seemed satisfied with his last rash attempt, so disastrous and so wanton in the destruction of the lives of his soldiers. He at once began to send off his trains to the crossings of the Potomac, and on the same night, in the midst of rain and storm, the Confederates began to retreat, leaving their dead on the field and their wounded uncared for; Ewell's division remaining to keep up appearances until nearly noon on the 5th.

July 14. A laborious march brought Lee's whole army to Hagerstown on the 7th; finally he crossed the river, which had been swollen by rains, thus delaying the passage for several days. Meade was cautious to excess, and unwilling to run risks the end would not justify; he was much censured for

<sup>1</sup> Life of Lee, p. 249.

allowing the Confederate army to escape so easily, yet in the pursuit he captured great numbers of prisoners ; many of whom were wounded and cruelly left by the roadside to lighten the trains. Lee fell back and finally took position on the south side of the Rapidan, and Meade in his old quarters on the north side of the Rappahannock. In this battle the Union army lost in killed 2,864, in wounded 13,790 ; the Federals buried 4,500 of the enemy's dead, and 26,500 wounded fell into their hands, and 13,621 other prisoners.

CHAP.  
LXII.  
1863.

Aug.  
1.

Gen. Grant, finding it impossible to take Vicksburg from his present position, determined to pass a portion of his army on the west side of the river from Milliken's Bend to a point below, and then by running the gauntlet of the Vicksburg batteries obtain gunboats and transports to ferry over his troops to the east side of the river.

A portion of the army commenced the laborious march, most of the way over an inundated and spongy soil ; the soldiers oftentimes halting to construct corduroy roads.

Mar.  
29.

Meantime Admiral Porter ran past the Vicksburg batteries with gunboats and a number of transports, which were all protected from shot by cotton and hay in bales. These transports were manned by volunteers. Said Gen. Grant in one of his reports : " It is a striking feature of the volunteer army of the United States that there is nothing which men are called upon to do, mechanical or professional, that accomplished adepts cannot be found for the duty required, in almost every regiment."

The gunboats and transports passed down, the former bombarding Grand Gulf, but without much success, and at Bruinsburg they met the army, which was at once ferried over, and General McClelland's corps marched out toward Port Gibson to occupy certain hills. He was successful in driving the enemy toward Grand Gulf, which place General Pemberton ordered to be evacuated and the troops to join him at Vicksburg ; and he urgently cried to General Joe Johnston, who had chief command of the Confederate

Apr  
30.

May  
1.

CHAP. LXII.  
1863. forces in that section, for reinforcements. The latter replied : " If Grant crosses, unite all your troops and beat him back ; success will give back what was abandoned to win it."

May 8. Grant waited five days for supplies and for Sherman, who had made a demonstration up the Yazoo, to join him ; then began a series of rapid movements and victories by the Union troops. He first moved toward Jackson, the State capital, throwing out parallel divisions, bewildering Pemberton as to his real object. The soldiers had rations for five days, sufficient for this short and decisive campaign. As the army advanced they came in contact with the enemy from time to time. They found them strongly posted in the woods near the village of Raymond. After a contest of three hours the Confederates were driven from their position, they taking the direction of Jackson. Great numbers threw down their arms and deserted. The next day General McPherson's corps occupied Clinton, and obtained some important dispatches at the telegraph office ; meanwhile Johnston had arrived at Jackson and taken command. Sherman and McPherson, despite the miry roads, were moving on, and three miles from Jackson met Johnston's army, about 11,000 strong. McPherson engaged the main body, and Sherman passed round, flanking the enemy and driving the riflemen from their pits. The Confederates soon left the field, having lost 250 prisoners and eighteen guns. Grant left Sherman at Jackson to destroy the war material and railways, but to *protect private* property, while he himself hastened to attack Pemberton, who was said to be in a strong position at Champion Hill with 25,000 men. General Grant was on the ground, but wished to delay the battle till the Thirteenth Corps (McClelland's) could come up, but ere he arrived the Confederates began the battle, at 11 A. M. ; and after a short and decisive struggle they were driven from the field, with great loss in killed and wounded. They fell back to Black River railroad bridge, where they made a stand ; but their soldiers were sadly demoralized,

May 12.

May 14.

May 16.

and when a Union brigade charged their right in order to obtain a better position, they fled in disorder. "All is lost!" re-echoed from the ranks, and the panic-stricken soldiers crowded into Vicksburg, at ten o'clock at night, as into a trap.

CHAP.  
LXII.  
1863.

Vicksburg was invested the next day. Grant at first ordered an assault, hoping that in the demoralized condition of the enemy he might carry the place; but it was too carefully fortified to be thus taken, and he was forced to begin a regular siege. Then followed a series of expedients, such as mines, one of which when exploded blew a fort one hundred feet into the air. The garrison was nearly exhausted, and famine was pressing on when, on July 3d, at 8 A.M., a flag of truce came out from the besieged lines bearing a communication for General Grant, which contained proposals for surrender. The terms were arranged and the Confederates laid down their arms and were paroled—about 32,000 in number.

May  
23.

July  
4.

Port Hudson, twenty-two miles above Baton Rouge, had been invested by General Banks. The attention of the garrison was attracted by echoes of great shoutings in the Federal lines. It was soon ascertained that the cause of the uproar was the announcement of the capitulation of Vicksburg. General Gardner immediately surrendered Port Hudson with its garrison of more than 6,000 men with all their war material. The Mississippi was now open its entire length. The Confederacy had lost from July 1st to 9th 80,000 men and an immense amount of war material. General Banks's army consisted partly of troops of African descent. Many of these were from the Northern States, some were freedmen emancipated by the President's proclamation. To their honor be it said they were not guilty of outrages on their recent masters. They made efficient soldiers; more than 50,000 during 1863 enlisted in the Union armies, and about 100,000 the following year.

July  
9.

Quite a number of minor expeditions were made during the siege of these two important places; the first of these

**CHAP.** was marked by boldness and success. Colonel B. H.  
**LXII.** Grierson made a cavalry raid from La Grange, Tenn., with  
**1863.** 1,700 men, sweeping through the center of Mississippi,  
**Apr.** destroying \$4,000,000 worth of contraband property, and  
**17.** coming round in safety to Baton Rouge.

**July** The Confederate General John H. Morgan made a raid  
**8.** into Kentucky, and after some successes and repulses  
crossed the Ohio at Bradensburg into the State of Indiana.  
The people turned out promptly and met him at every  
point, though he had an effective force of 2,800 men. He  
was chased so hard that near New Lisbon, Ohio, he himself  
was glad to surrender. Only 500 of his men escaped. The  
gunboats in the river had prevented his recrossing. He  
did much damage to the railroads, but so imperfectly that  
they were soon repaired.

**Apr.** A naval expedition under Admiral Dupont was fitted  
**7.** out against the forts in Charleston harbor. Nine iron-clads  
on a clear, bright morning, when there was just sufficient  
wind to blow away the smoke of battle, steamed up toward  
Charleston. Not a gun was fired until they had reached a  
position on which were trained the guns of Forts Sumter  
and Moultrie and several other batteries. After a most  
gallant bombardment the iron-clads were withdrawn, as it  
was discovered that without a coöperative land force the  
forts could not be taken. One of the iron-clads was so  
damaged she was blown up. General Hunter, in command  
of the department, was succeeded by General Q. A. Gil-  
**July** more, and Admiral Dahlgren superseded Dupont. Gilmore  
**6.** now began regular siege operations; and at length by a  
continuous bombardment of siege-guns and iron-clads Sum-  
ter was crumbled to pieces. Gilmore occupied a point four  
**Aug.** miles distant, and from there he threw shells into Charles-  
**24.** ton itself, which was soon abandoned by most of the  
inhabitants.

An English blockade-runner—the *Fingal*—came into Savannah in November, 1861, but was unable to return

with a cargo of cotton, because of the fleet investing the harbor. The Confederate authorities fitted her out as an iron-clad, somewhat after the manner of the famous *Merri-mac*, and called her the *Atlanta*. Her prowess excited great expectations, and it was proclaimed by her officers that no iron-clad in the Federal navy could withstand her attacks. Admiral Dupont, hearing of this iron-clad ram, sent the monitors *Weehawken* and *Nahant*, under Captain Rodgers, to Warsaw Sound to watch for her, as it was ascertained that in a few days she was coming out to spread havoc along the coast. Rodgers arrived, and sent a little steamer up the Savannah as a scout. Early one morning the scout announced that the *Atlanta* was coming down the river; all hands on the monitors were piped to quarters. Rodgers steamed down the river to decoy the *Atlanta* into deep water, where he could more easily maneuver the *Weehawken*. The ram hastened to pursue, thinking the monitor was trying to escape; when she came within easy range Captain Rodgers slackened his speed, and he himself sighted one of the *Weehawken's* 15-inch guns, and the shot smashed the *Atlanta's* pilot-house to flinders, wounding both the pilots; another 15-inch shot struck her half way from her gunwale, crushing her iron and wood work, and making a large hole, killing one man and wounding twelve. Four out of five of the *Weehawken's* shots took effect; the *Atlanta* failed to injure her antagonist, and after a contest of fifteen minutes she hauled down her flag. The disappointment was great to the gentlemen and ladies who had been induced to accompany the *Atlanta* in other boats, with the expectation of seeing her capture the monitors.

Congress found it necessary to pass a law authorizing the President to recruit the army by a draft from able-bodied citizens between the ages of 20 and 45. This he ordered for 300,000 men. In consequence of this order a riot, the most terrible in our history, began in the city of New York, and lasted for three days, but was finally put down by the police, with the aid of armed citizens and

CHAP.  
LXII.  
1863.

June  
17.

Mar.  
8.

July  
13.

**CHAP.** soldiers from the forts in the harbor, but after, it is esti-  
**LXII.** mated, about two hundred persons were killed, mostly  
**1863.** rioters. The latter began by burning the houses where the provost marshals had their offices, the fire often extending much farther. The spirit which animated a certain class of the rioters manifested itself in the burning of the Half Orphan Asylum for colored children, and other fiendish outrages were perpetrated upon the colored population. Afterward great numbers of the rioters were arrested, tried and sentenced to years of imprisonment. The riot would have been subdued sooner, had not the National Guard—city militia—been absent at the call of the President to aid in repelling Lee and his army from Pennsylvania.

The depression and disquietude in the Confederacy were very great after the reverses from July 1st to 9th. Jefferson Davis issued a proclamation ordering into the field all white men between the ages of eighteen and forty-five. These were to serve three years, and if they refused to report themselves they were to be treated as deserters from the Confederate army, that is, to suffer the penalty of being shot, according to military law. The Confederate financial prospects were becoming worse and worse, and these reverses had crushed every hope of recognition by foreign powers, and even the expectation of mediation faded away.

The laboring classes of England, as far as they understood the matter, sympathized with the free States in their struggle with the slave States. The intelligent portion of the French people were still more pronounced. The Protestant pastors of France in an address (dated Paris, March 12th, 1863,) to their Protestant brethren in England, because of their want of sympathy with the free States in their struggle, use the following language: "No more revolting spectacle has ever been before the civilized world than a Confederacy, consisting mainly of Protestants, forming itself and demanding independence, in the nineteenth century of the Christian era, with a professed design of maintaining and propagating slavery. The triumph of

such a cause would put back the progress of Christian civilization and of humanity a whole century.”

CHAP.  
XII.

1863.

The Confederate authorities were greatly exasperated because colored men were allowed to enlist in the United States army. They were in the habit of giving no quarter to these soldiers, and the atrocities practiced upon those of them who happened to be captured in battle roused President Lincoln to issue a proclamation announcing that for every captured colored soldier sold into slavery there should be put one Confederate prisoner of war to labor on the public works, there to remain until the colored soldier was free and treated as a prisoner of war. This proclamation ended that species of outrage.

The organization of National Banks has proved an effective agency in securing a uniform currency and cheap exchange in mercantile transactions between the different sections of the whole country. These banks are required to invest their *entire* capital in United States interest-paying bonds, which interest is paid to the banks themselves in gold. *Ten* per cent of their capital is retained by the Government to meet contingencies, while *ninety* per cent of the same is furnished to the banks in the form of circulating notes. These notes are engraved, printed and registered by the Government alone, in order to control their issue and prevent fraud in the circulation of the banks getting beyond the legal amount. Should a national bank fail, the holder of its bills cannot suffer loss, as they would be redeemed by the United States Treasury. The notes of these banks are at par throughout the Union, and as such are received for all dues, “except duties on imports and interest on the public debt.” This financial measure greatly facilitates commercial relations between the people of different portions of the land, and aids in strengthening the union of the Nation.

## CHAPTER LXIII.

### LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

**The March to Chattanooga.—The Battle.—Chickamauga.—Burnside ; Knoxville.—Consolidated Armies.—Battle above the Clouds.—Bragg's Defeat.—A Stringent Order.—Marauders in Missouri.—Massacre at Lawrence.—Red River Expedition.—Massacre at Fort Pillow.—Grant ; Lieutenant-General.—Position of Affairs.—Sherman flanks Johnston; he falls back.—Death of Bishop Polk.—Kenesaw Mountain.—Across the Chattahoochee.—Hood in Command.—Death of McPherson.—Battles.—Atlanta Captured.—March to the Sea.—The Christmas Gift.**

**CHAP.**  
**LXIII.**  
**1863.**

FROM the battle of Murfreesboro, at the first of the year, till June 25th, Rosecrans remained in his camp recruiting, especially his cavalry. Meanwhile, General Bragg retired to the south bank of Duck river—a deep, narrow stream—whose fords he fortified with the greatest care, and waited for Rosecrans to come and attack him in his well-chosen position. The latter advanced not in the way marked out by his adversary, but by a series of skillfully devised flanking movements compelled Bragg to abandon all his well-laid plans, and to escape being taken at great disadvantage in the rear. He fell back into Alabama and continued his retreat across the Cumberland Mountains to Chattanooga, there he made a stand, having been largely reinforced from Lee's army by Longstreet's division and from Johnston's Mississippi force, and paroled prisoners from Vicksburg who had not been exchanged. He fortified that famous railroad center, and at various points on the Tennessee river threw up defensive works. Rosecrans was much retarded in his pursuit by the excessive rains, the swollen

streams and the want of bridges, which had been carefully destroyed by the retiring enemy. Chattanooga is on the Tennessee river at the mouth of a valley formed by a creek of the same name, between Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge. Lookout Mountain rises 2,400 feet above the sea; the base is wooded, but the sides, for the most part, are of abrupt rocks, which in places are perpendicular.

CHAP.  
LXIII.  
1863.

On Rosecrans's approach Bragg evacuated Chattanooga, which the former occupied, himself, and also a portion of Lookout Mountain by Crittenden's division, and the valley of the Chickamauga by General Thomas's corps. Bragg advanced his forces over Chickamauga Creek to get between Chattanooga and Rosecrans's main army. This movement brought on an engagement. About 11 A.M. the Confederates attacked the Union left flank with their whole strength, and forced it back after an obstinate resistance. The Federals being reinforced in turn took the offensive, and by 4 P.M. recovered nearly all the ground lost. The Confederates left their dead on the field and all their badly wounded. Meanwhile, Generals Bishop Polk and Hill assaulted the Union center, which wavered for a short time but recovered and held the enemy in check; then the assault was made again with a stronger force, and the center was compelled to give way. Sheridan's division came up, and presently others, and after a spirited charge at sunset regained the entire ground. After dark the enemy made a desperate attempt on the center, but were received so vigorously that they abandoned their position. This ended the first day's battle.

Aug.  
20.

Sept.  
19.

The Confederates renewed the conflict the next day by again attacking the Union left. The Federals held their ground for a time, and then fell back in order, and being reinforced, checked the enemy. Two hours after they threw a tremendous force upon the Union center, where General Thomas commanded. During the night his men extemporized a barrier of logs and fence rails, from behind which their musketry told severely on the enemy, while the

Sept.  
20.

CHAP.  
LXIII.

1863.  
Aug.  
11.

artillery on rising ground in the rear made havoc in their ranks. The Confederates came on with frantic yells. They often staggered under the well-directed fire, but would rally again under the urgency of their officers. The Union center had been weakened by almost one-third; the disordered portions fell back toward Chattanooga, and Rosecrans was carried along with the crowd. Thomas then moved to a position on the slopes of Mission Ridge, and there massed what artillery he had, which played most effectively on the enemy. They were urged against the position of Thomas by Longstreet and Bishop Polk with a disregard of human life scarcely known. As they came up they were slaughtered at a terrible rate by well-directed discharges of musketry and artillery. Then they made a flank movement, and were attacked by Union cavalry and severely repulsed. At 4 P.M. Thomas retired in order to Chattanooga. The losses of the Confederates were enormous, as they were so much exposed in their assaults. Bragg admitted a loss of 18,000—now known to be much below the actual number. The Union loss was 1,644 killed and 9,262 wounded.

The "Army of the Cumberland" was in straits for provisions at Chattanooga, as the numerous cavalry of the enemy were continually breaking their long line of communications. The Government detached two corps from the Army of the Potomac and sent them under Hooker. They went by rail, and arrived at Chattanooga in an almost incredibly short time. By the same authority, General Grant sent Sherman with a large portion of the army that had captured Vicksburg. Rosecrans, meantime, had been relieved, and General Thomas appointed to succeed him.

Sept.  
1.

General Burnside, who was in command of the Department of the Ohio, moved through Eastern Kentucky and reached Knoxville, Tenn., where he was hailed with rejoicings by the inhabitants. He took possession of the famous Cumberland Gap, cutting the communication between Richmond and Middle Tennessee. After the battle of Chickamauga, Bragg, at the suggestion of Jefferson Davis, who

was visiting his army, sent Longstreet to drive Burnside out of Knoxville. The former made an assault, but was so severely repulsed that he was under the necessity of besieging the town, which he did till he was compelled to raise the siege on the approach of Sherman and retreat into West Virginia, and thence joined Lee's army on the Rapidan.

The authorities at Washington consolidated the Western armies—the Cumberland, the Tennessee, the Ohio—and appointed General Grant to the command. He assumed office and appointed General Thomas to the first named; General Sherman to the second, and General Burnside to the third. On the day that Grant himself arrived at Chattanooga, Hooker surprised and drove the Confederates out of Lookout Valley; they moving round the mountain to Mission Ridge. Sherman's troops from Vicksburg arrived, but so secretly that Bragg was entirely ignorant of their presence. Grant at once availed himself of the mistake of sending Longstreet to Knoxville, and began to make demonstrations on Bragg's left to divert his attention; sending a large force with much ostentation; and taking position on high ground in sight of the enemy, but as soon as it was dark the force countermarched and reached the main army in the morning. He also sent General Thomas, who surprised the enemy and drove them before him, obtaining an important position, which he secured by fortifying. Meanwhile, to conceal Sherman's march round to Bragg's right, he directed Hooker to make an attempt on Lookout mountain; he moved at once and soon his men were picking their way up. A fog had rested upon the mountain during the morning, which concealed the movement from the Confederates, and they only learned of it as their rifle-pits one by one were taken; at 12 o'clock Geary's battalion rounded the peak of the mountain still enveloped in clouds. The Federal soldiers had been ordered to maintain their place if they should gain the top, but their appearance was so sudden and unexpected by the enemy that they took to flight, and Geary's soldiers forgot their orders and rushed on in pur-

CHAP.  
LXIII.

1863.  
Sept.  
29.

Dec.  
8.

Oct.  
18.

Oct.  
28.

Nov.  
23.

CHAP. suit ; other brigades were coming up, and after two or three  
 LXIII. sharp conflicts the plateau was cleared, and the Confede-  
 1863. rates aided in their descent over the rocks to the valley below. About 2 P.M., the clouds rolled down off the mountain and revealed the stars and stripes planted on the summit ; such was the battle above the clouds. We may imagine the cheers that went up from the Union army below in Chattanooga. Sherman had now come within striking distance and was waiting for the time appointed—daylight—when the whole Union line was to advance. From a cone-shaped hill called Bald Knob, could be had a view of the entire battle-field ; on the top of this hill, Grant, with some officers, took his stand.

Nov.  
25.

Nov.  
25.

Sherman commenced the attack on the Confederate right about 10 A.M., and in an hour's time it became general along the lines. The contest was carefully watched from Bald Knob ; it was seen that Bragg was weakening his centre by sending troops to his right ; the crisis had come. Grant signalled the command and three or four brigades dashed down the slope and across the valley and straight for the centre of the Confederate army, literally running over the rifle-pits in their front, burst out of the woods like an overwhelming torrent carrying all before them ; the panic stricken enemy fled in every direction. Just at sunset the Ridge was in Union hands and the Confederates were disastrously defeated. Pollard says : "A disgraceful panic ensued ; the whole left wing of the Confederates became involved, gave way and scattered in unmitigated rout." It was a most striking scene to behold the flaunting signal flags on the tops of these mountains, telegraphing to one another, and to hear the cheers that rose along the lines for six miles.

General Grant the same evening telegraphed to Washington : "I believe I am not premature in announcing a complete victory over Bragg ; Lookout Mountain top, all the rifle-pits in Chattanooga valley, and Missionary Ridge are held by us." The pursuit was commenced the next

morning, but was soon discontinued, and Sherman was at once sent to relieve Burnside at Knoxville.

CHAP.  
LXIII.

1863.

The authorities at Richmond censured Bragg for his misfortune, alleging that his positions were so impregnable that he should not have been defeated, and General Joe Johnston was sent to supersede him in command.

General Grant issued a very stringent order to restrain the soldiers from marauding upon the inhabitants, and appropriating private property. Any soldier found guilty of such conduct was to be summarily punished. Every effort, consistent with military necessity, was made to protect the poor people of the Confederacy, and these orders were enforced, as far as possible, by the Union officers.

July  
25.

General Fred. Steele was sent from Vicksburg to occupy Little Rock, the capital of Arkansas, in order to revive the loyal element in the State, and re-establish the legitimate authority. General Steele repaired to Helena and assumed command, then to Clarendon, on the White river, and then across the country, driving the Confederates before him, who finally made a stand three miles below Little Rock, but were quickly defeated, and pursued so vigorously they were unable to set fire to the town. Except an iron-clad ram on the stocks, property, both public and private, was held sacred. A provisional government was established; General Steele remaining some months. The Confederate power in the State was effectually broken, and only squads of guerrillas prowled about the country, robbing the houses, granaries and cellars of their own people.

Aug.  
17.

Sept.  
10.

In Missouri hordes of these men swarmed over the country pillaging the people, disloyal or loyal. Under an outlaw named Quantrell, a band of these marauders dashed into Lawrence, Kansas, at half-past four in the morning, and in cold blood murdered every man they could find. "Eighty-five widows and two hundred orphans were made that morning." The town was plundered and ladies robbed of their jewelry.

Aug.  
17.

Expeditions of Federal troops occupied Corpus Christi

CHAP. on the coast, and Brownsville on the Rio Grande in Texas ;  
LXIII. an expedition was sent up the Red river against Shreve-  
1864. port, an important point.  
Jan.

After much preparation General Banks was ready to move. Admiral Porter, with fifteen gunboats, passed up Red river, freeing it of obstructions and its banks from the presence of the enemy. The gunboats reached Alexandria and Union troops occupied the town. The Confederates, scattering over the country, burned all the cotton they could find, and the houses in which it was stored. The army from necessity left the river ; the advance carelessly fell into an ambuscade, was forced to fall back, and finally abandoning the train reached the main army. The next day the Confederates, much elated, attacked the Federals but were severely repulsed. It was thought best to give up the enterprise since the river was falling fast and the gunboats would be useless. When the fleet reached the rapids near Alexandria it was found it could not pass down. This was obviated by the genius of Colonel Bailey, of Wisconsin, who constructed a dam across the river, thus raising the water, and at a signal the dam was loosened and the boats passed safely down on the flood. Thus ended the fruitless expedition.

Mar. The Confederate General Forrest carried on an irregular  
24. warfare in Western Kentucky and Tennessee, always treat-  
ing the Union inhabitants with great cruelty. He captured  
Union City and its garrison of 450 men ; he also made an  
attack on Paducah but was repulsed. The same Forrest and  
his band carried Fort Pillow by assault ; after the fort  
surrendered, the garrison to the number of 300 were  
slaughtered in cold blood, because a portion were colored  
men. Forrest, from his statement of the case, seems to have  
Apr. been at least not altogether responsible for the outrage.  
12

The successes of General Grant attracted the attention both of the nation and of Congress, which body revived the grade of Lieutenant-General, extinct since the retirement of

General Scott. This was conferred on General Grant; who at once turned over the army at Chattanooga to General W. T. Sherman, and repaired to Washington, whither he had been summoned by telegraph. He was less known personally than any of the department generals; a man of deeds and few words; while a strong vein of common sense in his character gave an earnest he would be equal to emergencies likely to arise.

CHAP.  
LXIII.1864.  
Mar.  
3.

At the White House the President, in the presence of his Cabinet and General Halleck, presented him his commission of Lieutenant-General, saying a few words of kindness and expressing his own confidence, then adding: "As the country here trusts you, so, under God, it will sustain you." Grant, after paying a compliment "to the noble Union armies," ended by saying: "I feel the full weight of the responsibilities devolving upon me, and I know if they are met it will be due to those armies, and, above all, to the favor of that Providence which leads both nations and men."

Mar.  
9.

He entered immediately upon his duties, visiting the headquarters of General Meade to confer with him, and the next day left for the West and by appointment met Sherman at Nashville to consult with him. Grant believed there could be no substantial peace until the military power of the Confederacy was utterly crushed, and to that purpose he devoted all his energies. As a summary of the position of affairs at this time it may be stated: There were two main armies of the Confederacy—one under Lee defending Richmond, the other under Johnston guarding the approaches to Atlanta, the great strategic point and railroad center of Northwest Georgia; the Mississippi river was patrolled by Union gunboats from St. Louis to its mouth; the line of the Arkansas was held, and all west of the Mississippi north of that stream; in Southern Louisiana a few points not far from the river were held by the Federals, and at the mouth of the Rio Grande was a small garrison; along the Atlantic coast, in addition to the block-

Mar.  
10.

CHAP.  
LXIII.

1864.

ade, many important places were held ; and on the Gulf, Pensacola and New Orleans. Such was the position when General Grant assumed supreme command. His design was to keep Lee and Johnston so much pressed that they would be unable, as heretofore, to aid each other.

May  
9-10.

Sherman was ready to move. At Dalton, thirty miles southeast of Chattanooga, was the Confederate army, 30,000 strong, and, by its well-chosen position, equal to twice that number. Here Johnston was waiting to be attacked, when he learned that a portion of the Union army, by a rapid march through passes and gaps, had flanked him upon his left and was threatening the railroad in his rear, while another portion was moving upon his front, and still another on his right was marching round his army ; he was therefore compelled to give up his stronghold and fall back eighteen miles to Resaca, another strong position behind Camp Creek, its whole line well fortified on steep hills.

May  
13.

Sherman reconnoitered and again flanked his adversary. Johnston at one time, thinking he had discovered a weak point in the Union lines, made an attack upon the Twentieth Corps, Hooker's, but was repulsed at all points and driven from several strongholds. Foiled at every attempt, he moved his forces against the Union left flank, and at 7 P. M. the Confederates came in tremendous force and overwhelming numbers upon that point. The Federals were forced back. Suddenly a cheer was heard, and Hooker's Corps came up, and the first intimation they gave the enemy was the cheer, which was followed by a rush over the dead bodies of their comrades. They broke the enemy's line beyond recovery, and drove them more than a mile.

May  
16.

At 2 next morning the Confederates evacuated Resaca, passing over Oostenaula River and breaking down the bridge behind them, and moved on until they reached the Etowah River, over which they crossed and took position in the mountains around Altoona. On the crest of these mountains were carefully arranged batteries to sweep every approach, and here Johnston resolved to fight a decisive

battle. The Union army came up, but Sherman had no idea of sacrificing his men by assaulting so strong a position, and he flanked Johnston again and compelled him to fall back toward Dallas. When within four miles of that place Hooker's division overtook him. A skirmish began, other divisions came up, and it became a battle severely contested; but at length the Confederates were driven back to where three important roads met. The Union soldiers threw up entrenchments during the night, which Johnston assaulted and was repulsed. The Federals afterward made an assault upon what was deemed a weak point of the enemy's line, and they, too, were repulsed.

CHAP.  
LXIII.  
1864.

The Confederate commander remained quiet for two days, and Sherman ordered a movement to his rear, and Johnston again thought best to fall back to the new position at Kenesaw Mountain, fortifying and extending his line about ten miles; his centre, Pine Mountain, being much advanced. On these mountains the enemy had signal stations, but Sherman's sign-corps soon learned their sign-code and revealed their secrets. Bishop-General Polk, with his staff, came out on the crest of Pine Mountain to reconnoitre. A rifled field-piece was sighted by Captain Simonson, and fired at the group from one of the Union batteries: that shot killed the Bishop. The information was immediately communicated to both armies.

June  
14.

Sherman decided to break the enemy's line at Pine Mountain, the advanced center, and a rapid artillery fire was opened upon it. During the next night Johnston abandoned the mountain. The following day the Union army pressed nearer and nearer, and Johnston retired to Kenesaw Mountain. Now followed several days of rain, and the Federals made but little progress in their approaches. Hood's division of Confederates made an assault upon Hooker's advanced lines early in the morning, driving in the pickets, and came upon the main line behind extemporized breastworks. They were repulsed, leaving the field covered with their dead. Johnston had fortified his

June  
17.

June  
22.

CHAP.  
LXIII.

1864.

July  
2.July  
9.July  
17.July  
20.

lines with great care, and Sherman resolved to make approaches and assault them. The assault was made, but failed to carry the point, yet the Union soldiers held their advanced position, and Johnston again evacuated his lines in the night, and retired toward the Chattahoochee River, to a new fortified line on which a thousand or more slaves had been engaged a month. The fortifications along this line of retreat were constructed more or less by the same hands. Sherman followed up, and by flanking his adversary right and left, held the river eighteen miles above and ten miles below him, while Thomas was pressing him in front, and Johnston was compelled to cross the river during the night, burning the bridge and his pontoons, and fell back toward Atlanta, five or six miles distant. Sherman delayed a few days to repair railways and bridges and strengthen important points. When ready he began to move on Atlanta.

The Confederate authorities at Richmond were dissatisfied with Johnston, and he was relieved of his command and General John B. Hood appointed in his place. The latter was incautious to rashness, but full of courage. "This appointment," says Sherman in his Memoirs, "meant fight." Strong breastworks had been constructed in front and around Atlanta.

About noon, the Union soldiers, having come up within skirmishing distance, halted and were resting, when suddenly the enemy rushed out of their nearest entrenchments, and fell with great fury upon Hooker's corps and a portion of Howard's. The latter extemporized a barrier of fence-rails. After two hours fighting the assailants were forced to retire to their entrenchments, having lost more than 4,000, killed and wounded, and accomplished nothing except to teach the Union army to be on its guard. The Federals, in contracting their lines and cutting communications, seized a hill near the Augusta Railway, from which elevation cannon balls could be thrown into the streets of the city. This

hill the Confederates made a desperate attempt to recover, but were repulsed with loss.

CHAP.  
LXIII.

1864.

The Union army still continued contracting its lines carefully, when about noon the scouts reported the enemy in motion and massing on the Union left. On they came without a note of warning, and the battle raged till dark, with occasionally a gain by the Confederates, but in the main they were repulsed with great loss, and the grasp of the besieging army became still more strong on the doomed city. They made seven assaults during the day, and were as often repulsed, Hood's loss being at least twice as great as Sherman's. In this battle fell McPherson, only thirty years of age, but the most promising of the corps commanders. General O. O. Howard was appointed to succeed McPherson in the command of the Army of the Tennessee.

July  
22.

Meanwhile, the Union cavalry was making successful raids around Atlanta, destroying railways; all of which were broken except the Macon and Atlanta.

General Howard's corps was sent round to the right of the city to destroy a railroad. Hood was on the alert, and hurried out to crush the force before it could get assistance. On he came in solid columns, sweeping away the Union pickets; but presently he came in the most reckless manner, with his men crowded together upon the Federals, who were behind breastworks hastily constructed of logs, fence rails and stones. The Union soldiers, deliberately taking aim, swept away line after line of his best men. The proportion of the killed was unusually large. "Six successive charges were made, which were six times gallantly repulsed, each time with fearful loss of life." Hood's lines were about twelve miles in extent, and his fortifications were manned in part by recent levies, that he might use his veterans in the field.

July  
28.

Sherman determined at all hazards to break the Macon and Atlanta railway, south of the city, and a large force accomplished the work effectually by burning the ties and heating the rails red hot, and winding them around trees

CHAP.  
LXIII.1864  
Aug.  
28.

and telegraph poles. Hood, noticing that a large portion of Sherman's army were gone, thought they were retreating. The rumor spread, and the citizens crowded to give him their congratulations, which he was receiving, when a courier on horseback dashed in and brought the astounding news that Sherman had possession of the road, and that Hardee, who had been sent with a large force to protect Jonesboro, was disastrously defeated.

That night strange noises like earthquakes or explosions were heard in the direction of Atlanta. Hood was blowing up the magazines and evacuating the place.

Sept.  
2.

Sherman entered the once beautiful city, now almost a mass of ruins, and it was telegraphed over the land, "Atlanta is ours, and fairly won." Hood's scattered forces were afterward more or less united, and he made many attempts to annoy the Union army by cutting railroads and attacking places garrisoned, but in all these he totally failed. Sherman detached General Thomas and his corps with other divisions to move on Nashville and repel Hood should he make an attempt in that direction. Jefferson Davis after the fall of Atlanta visited the region, and at Macon encouraged the people by assuring them Sherman would yet be driven back, and "our cavalry and our people will harass and destroy his army as did the Cossacks that of Napoleon; and the Yankee general like him will escape with only a body guard."

Sept.  
23.

Sherman in one of his letters to Grant made a suggestion that it was "futile to chase round after Hood," but, leaving Tennessee in the hands of Thomas, "to destroy Atlanta and march across Georgia to Savannah or Charleston, breaking roads and doing irreparable damage; we cannot remain on the defensive." This led to the consideration of the question more fully, though it would seem a similar thought had occurred to Grant; and preparations were made for the "march to the sea." Meantime, Hood with his army was hastening on toward middle Tennessee, expecting to defeat Thomas.

Sherman now destroyed in Atlanta the public buildings used by the Confederates for military purposes—no private dwellings or churches were designedly injured—and set out to push across the country to the sea, and if need be come in the rear of Richmond. The army marched in two columns with spreading wings—extending sixty miles—so thoroughly bewildering the enemy that they were unable to make much opposition. This bold march ended December 10, within a few miles of Savannah, and soon communication was had with the Union fleet which was in waiting. Three days later Fort McAllister, the defense of Savannah, was taken, and General Hardee in consequence evacuated the city, which was immediately occupied by Union forces. Sherman sent the following dispatch to President Lincoln: “I beg leave to present, as a Christmas gift, the city of Savannah, with 150 heavy guns and plenty of ammunition, and also 25,000 bales of cotton.”

CHAP.  
LXIII.  
1864.

Nov.  
16.

Dec  
20.

The army, when thus cut loose from depots of provisions, was forced to depend for sustenance upon the country through which it passed, and strict orders were given to prevent outrages on the people. “Soldiers must not enter the dwellings of the inhabitants, or commit any trespass;” when needed to replace those injured, foraging parties were permitted to take “horses, mules and wagons,” “discriminating, however, between the rich, who usually were hostile, and the poor and industrious, usually neutral or friendly;” “to leave with each family a reasonable portion for their maintenance;” and “to refrain from abusive or threatening language.”<sup>1</sup> Complaints have been made that these orders were, in some instances, not fully carried out; but there is no evidence that their violation was connived at by the higher officers in command, but that the marauders were punished when detected.

<sup>1</sup> Sherman's Memoirs, Vol. II. p. 175.

## CHAPTER LXIV.

### LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Grant's choice of subordinates.—Battles in the Wilderness.—Butler at Bermuda Hundred.—Flanking Movement.—Early in the Valley.—Sheridan in the Valley.—Sheridan's ride.—The Mine Exploded.—Capture of Mobile.—Outrages in Missouri.—Capture of Wilmington.—Battle of Nashville.—Defeat of Hood.

CHAP.  
LXIV.

1864.

WE now return to the Army of the Potomac. Arrangements were in preparation for the final struggle. General B. F. Butler was assigned to the general supervision of the force designed to follow up the James to Richmond, and to make a diversion toward Petersburg. He had about 30,000 men, under the command of Generals W. F. Smith and Gilmore—the latter had been recalled from Charleston Harbor with 10,000 men. General Sigel was in command in that famous battle-field of the war—Shenandoah Valley—in connection with General Crook on the Kanawha, West Virginia; General Meade, the hero of Gettysburg, with the main army on the north bank of the Rapidan.

General Grant always showed great skill and knowledge of men in the choice of subordinate officers; nor did he ever seem to be influenced by professional jealousy. He brought with him to Washington only three or four staff officers—no more than were absolutely necessary. The general plan of campaigns was marked out, and he availed himself of the skill of his subordinate commanders, who, in the details, were permitted to exercise their own judgment in accordance with the general plan. Some of the best suggestions of generals in the field were frequently disregarded by Halleck, the commander-in-chief at Washington, as if

he knew better—though hundreds of miles away—than the equally educated commander in the field. We must not overlook the private soldiers composing the armies of the Republic. They were intelligent and understood how much was involved in the contest; with this knowledge they had left their homes, and were willing to risk their lives in defense of the Union of their country, and frequently the superior intelligence, the bravery and dash of private soldiers crowned with success important maneuvers.

Lee's army lay on the South side of the Rapidan, virtually entrenched in the "Wilderness." This is a barren region, covered with scrub-oak and tufted trees, where a thousand soldiers could keep four times their number at bay. This was intersected by many narrow cross roads, bounded on either side by a perfect jungle. The whole district and every road was thoroughly known to the Confederate generals; and Lee from his position and knowledge of the ground was thus able to throw, as he wished, a strong force on any particular point.

The Union army crossed the Rapidan at Germana Ford unopposed—purposely, says Childe, in order to secure a battle in the "Wilderness." Grant had intended to pass rapidly through the wilderness, with as little fighting as possible, and force his adversary back toward Richmond, because in that jungle he could not deploy his men, and could only use about twenty out of his three hundred pieces of artillery; neither could he use his cavalry. Early the next morning the Union army began its onward march to get beyond this labyrinth of trees, when it was met at two points by two Confederate forces brought up by parallel roads. This was at first thought to be a feint, but at 11 A.M. the battle began in earnest by the Union soldiers assaulting the enemy. The conflict of this day was peculiar. The soldiers groped for each other through the thicket, and with various successes in different parts of the woods. It was a drawn battle—then both armies lay on their arms.

CHAP.  
LXIV.  
1863.

May  
4.

May  
5.

CHAP.  
LXIV.1864.  
May  
6.

After receiving reports from his subordinates, Grant issued orders for attacking the enemy the next morning, and at dawn Hancock's division, sustained by Wadsworth, fell furiously on the Confederate center, and after a few hours drove it a mile and a half, taking many prisoners. They were now reinforced, outnumbering Hancock, and in turn forced him back over the same ground, but at 11 A.M. he made a stand from which the enemy failed to move him. Here fell General Wadsworth, a gentleman of excellent worth, and high social position; and here also fell the Confederate Generals Jones, Jenkins and Stafford, very efficient officers. There was a lull for some hours, when the enemy at 4 P.M. made a desperate assault upon Hancock, and partially forced him from his position, but being reinforced the assailants were in turn driven back. Here Longstreet was severely wounded, and carried from the field, and Lee himself took immediate command. He restored order, but could not retrieve the field.

May  
9-10.

When the Union center advanced the next morning, Lee was found to have fallen back to a second position strongly entrenched. This line of battle was six miles long, along which raged the conflict; Lee fell back again and afterward fought only from behind breastworks, except where it could not be avoided. The Confederates were evidently discouraged, and when a portion of the Union army moved by night toward Spottsylvania Court House, Lee fell back lest he should be taken in the rear. Now commenced a series of conflicts in one of which General Sedgwick, one of the first of the corps commanders, was killed.

May  
11.

Grant telegraphed to the Secretary of war: "we have now ended the sixth day of very heavy fighting. The result, to this time, is much in our favor. I propose to fight it out on this line if it takes all summer."

May  
12.

The following morning at 4 o'clock, in a dense fog, the orders were given as quietly as possible, and the march was in silence. Hancock made a dash at an advanced position of the enemy, rushed over the breastwork, and captured the

two Generals, Johnson and Stewart, and nearly 4,000 prisoners, and thirty guns. Hancock moved on and captured a second line of rifle pits; this brought on a general battle which lasted all day, the latter part in the midst of a violent rain-storm.

CHAP.  
LXIV.  
1864.

Grant now delayed to move for several days, in order that the wounded could be sent to hospitals. A large number of surgeons arrived from the North, and members of both the Sanitary and Christian Commissions to take care of these wounded; also reinforcements and supplies came up.

General Sheridan set out at daylight with a large force of cavalry, moving toward Fredericksburg to deceive the enemy; then southward along the Confederate right, reached the railroad in their rear and destroyed ten miles of it, locomotives, trains of cars, and an immense amount of provisions, and released 400 captured Union soldiers. He pursued his way, burning depots and breaking railroads. At length he fell in with that chivalrous raider J. E. B. Stuart; they came to blows and the Confederates were defeated, leaving their commander, Stuart, mortally wounded. Pushing on, Sheridan came upon the outer defenses of Richmond itself. These he took, but found the second line too strong; he retired rapidly to and across the Chickahominy, and after a raid of five days returned to the army. This raid, in its effects, was one of the most important in the war.

May  
19.

May  
24.

General Butler put his forces on transports and landed them at a plantation named Bermuda Hundred, and then fortified his position. Then he sent a force, which after severe fighting destroyed a railroad bridge and a portion of the track seven miles North of Petersburg; the force captured some entrenchments at the railroad. Beauregard was in command, and under the cover of a dense fog he made a vigorous attack on the advance, and compelled them to fall back to Bermuda Hundred, and then threw up entrenchments paralleled to Butler's and prevented his moving.

May  
6.

May  
16.

The Union army by a flank movement came upon the

CHAP.  
LXIV.

1864.

North bank of the North Anna; Lee was found strongly posted beyond the river; for three days Grant made demonstrations and then in the night commenced flanking his adversary, and Lee was again compelled to abandon his position and fall back; all the Union army passed the Pamunkey river and moved on three miles toward Richmond.

June  
3.

Here the Confederates made a sudden attack in great force, but were repulsed with loss. Then Grant, to test their works, ordered an assault along the whole line. This was vigorously done, and the enemy were driven out of their first defenses and took shelter behind their second line. These were too strongly fortified to be easily taken. The Confederates during the day made wild charges against the Union lines, but in every instance were repulsed with loss. Lee ordered attacks on three successive nights on the Union lines. Every one failed and his army sustained heavy losses. These night attacks showed the desperation of the enemy and the watchfulness of the Federals, who were never surprised. By agreement there was now an armistice of two hours, in which both parties buried their dead and removed their wounded.

June  
7.

General Grant, finding the fortifications very strong in front, determined to unite with Butler and move on Richmond by way of Petersburg, twenty-two miles south of the former. According to Childe, Lee deemed Richmond more assailable from this direction than from the north. This movement took the enemy by surprise, as it was accomplished with so much celerity and with scarcely any difficulty. A portion of the troops passed by water down the York and up the James, and the remainder by land, crossing the James on pontoon bridges. Meantime an important cavalry raid, under Generals Wilson and Kautz, was conducted south of Richmond, destroying a portion of the Weldon Railroad and the Southside and Danville—in all about seventy miles, with rolling stock and depots—and then, after severe fighting, returned to the army, having

June  
28.

lost their light artillery. "The damage done the enemy in this expedition more than compensated for the loss sustained." CHAP.  
LXIV.  
1864.

Meanwhile General Sigel, who was in command in Shenandoah Valley with too small a force—8,000 men—was defeated by Breckenridge; General Crook, in West Virginia, failing to coöperate with Sigel. General Hunter was appointed in Sigel's place, and he was ordered to move up the valley and destroy railroads in the vicinity of Staunton and Gordonsville, and General Crook was to come in from the Kanawha. Hunter hastened on and met the enemy within twelve miles of Staunton, and after a conflict of ten hours routed them, capturing 1,500 prisoners; their commander, General Jones, was killed. Hunter lost only fifty men. Three days later he occupied Staunton. Now joined by Crook's troops, he marched toward Lynchburg, to which place Lee had sent a large force by the railway. Hunter's ammunition had given out, and he, skirmishing on the way with the enemy, fell back. not toward Grant's army as was expected, and from which Sheridan made a raid in order to meet him, but toward West Virginia. This retreat left the valley once more open to the Confederates, who, under General Early, pushed on in force to make a raid into Maryland and Pennsylvania to obtain forage and supplies, and as usual make a demonstration against Washington and induce Grant to send reinforcements from his army. The latter promptly sent troops from the James, and ordered others to follow who had just arrived in Hampton Roads from New Orleans.

Early, with about 20,000 men, moved rapidly down the valley to Martinsburg, where Sigel was in command with a small force. The latter retreated across the Potomac. The enemy followed rapidly, and crossing over arrived at Hagerstown; the citizens paying them \$20,000 they agreed not to burn the town. General Lew Wallace attacked the invaders so vigorously with his Union raw levies as to retard them until more troops arrived; then he, being still

May  
15.

June  
5.

July  
3.

CHAP.  
LXIV.

1864.

outnumbered, fell back, and the Confederates moved toward Washington; but being met by the bold attacks of General Auger they retired across the Potomac, and were in turn pursued by Averill with cavalry, who overtook their rear guard at Winchester and captured 500 prisoners.

By this time Hunter had arrived from West Virginia, and was ordered to maintain his position, but Early was reinforced and again began to move down the valley, forcing the Union troops back by outflanking them.

At this time another Confederate cavalry raid was made into Pennsylvania under McCausland; he suddenly appeared before the village of Chambersburg, then defenceless, and demanded \$500,000 ransom. The citizens were unable to raise so large a sum, and the raiders deliberately set the village on fire and burned two-thirds of it. In no instance, as far as known, did the Union soldiers purposely burn the private dwellings of a village.

Aug.  
5.

General Grant, to satisfy himself, hastened from City Point to confer with General Hunter, and directed him to pursue the Confederates up the valley and "*to keep the enemy in sight*"; to sweep the valley clean of provisions that might aid them, but protect private buildings as far as possible. Hunter expressed a desire to be relieved; Grant accepted the resignation and appointed Sheridan to succeed him, and formed the "Military Department of West Virginia, Washington, and Shenandoah Valley."

Sept.  
15.

Sheridan soon inspired his men with his own enthusiasm, and, being reinforced both by infantry and cavalry, he prepared to act promptly. Grant visited Sheridan to assure himself, and after an interview he was assured that the young commander understood himself and the enemy, and his simple order was, "Go in." In two days Sheridan moved, and, early in the morning, attacked Early, and after fighting all day carried his entire position and drove him through Winchester. Early lost 3,500 killed and wounded and 5,000 prisoners, and he did not dare stop till he reached Fisher's Hill, thirty miles south of Winchester.

Sept.  
19.

Scarcely had he halted to rest his men when the indomitable Sheridan pounced upon him, driving his forces through Harrisonburg and Staunton and scattering them through the gaps of the Blue Ridge. Sheridan sent forward his cavalry to destroy a portion of the Virginia Central Railway, and then fell back to Cedar Creek to rest and refresh his men.

CHAP.  
LXIV.  
1864.

Sept.  
22.

About a month later Early gathered his scattered forces, and, being heavily reinforced, moving rapidly and secretly, he, early in the morning, fell suddenly upon the sleeping Union soldiers, who were completely taken by surprise, but soon recovered themselves and sullenly fell back. Sheridan was at Winchester, twenty miles distant, when his ear first caught the faint roar of booming cannon. Suspecting what was going on, he mounted his horse and rode at full speed, and met his men retreating, they having been driven four miles. He dashed into their midst, and, waving his hat, exclaimed, "Face the other way, boys; we are going back!" Inspired by his presence, his men, with loud cheers, faced about and fell into line. The enemy, for the most part, had stopped to plunder the Federal camp. The Union cavalry, meanwhile, moved round and attacked them in flank, while the encouraged infantry charged in front. They were in a short time completely routed and driven from the field, abandoning everything; neither did they stop until they reached Staunton. Thus ended Confederate efforts to hold the valley or to invade the North. General Grant telegraphed to the Secretary of War: "This glorious victory stamps Sheridan, what I have always thought him, one of the ablest of generals." Sheridan was appointed by the President a Major-General in the regular army in place of General McClellan, who had recently resigned.

Oct.  
19.

Nov.  
6.

Colonel Henry Pleasants, of the Pennsylvania Volunteers, a practical miner, proposed to mine a certain point in the enemy's works before Petersburg. The proposition was accepted and the work commenced. In less than a month

CHAP. LXIV. it was finished. It extended several hundred feet, and terminated directly under a redoubt. In the mine was placed  
 1864. four tons of powder. It was a success, and was exploded  
 June 25. with terrible effect, tearing the redoubt to pieces; but unfortunately, by some mismanagement, the explosion was not  
 July 3. followed up by assault, as it ought to have been, and nothing of value was accomplished.

Around Petersburg the defenses were so well arranged and so well manned that it was madness to throw away human life in assaulting them, as one man within such entrenchments was at least equal to five outside. The  
 Aug. 18. Union army was not idle. A strong detachment seized Weldon Railway, and held it in spite of the most strenuous efforts on the part of the enemy to dislodge them. Several other movements were made, but without material success—  
 Oct. 27. one on the north side of the James, and another at Hatch-er's Run.

The capture of Mobile—the main port for blockade runners on the Gulf—had been delayed for lack of coöperation on the part of land forces. At length it was undertaken by Admiral Farragut with his iron-clads and war ships, and General Canby, detached from New Orleans for the purpose. The expedition arrived, and arrangements  
 July 8. were made on board the flag-ship, the *Hartford*, with General Canby. Mobile Bay is thirty miles long and twelve miles wide, and was defended by several strong forts, and within were floating the Confederates' main reliance, the ram *Tennessee* and several iron-clads—all under Rear-Admiral Buchanan—besides numerous dangerous torpedoes. The troops were landed on the west side of Dauphine Island, on the west side of the Bay, to operate against Fort  
 Aug. 5. Gaines.

At 4.45 A.M. the fleet, each vessel having another lashed to it, steamed in between the forts and gave their broadsides at short distance. Admiral Farragut, lashed to the maintop of the *Hartford*, had the fleet under his eye, and gave his commands by signals. The monitor *Tecumseh*.

## OUTRAGES IN MISSOURI—WILMINGTON CAPTURED.

which was to attack the ram *Tennessee*, ran foul of a torpedo and was sunk. Then the Admiral himself turned his attention to the ram. Several vessels ran butt against the *Tennessee*, and poured in their broadsides at short range. Finally the *Hartford* bore down and gave her a broadside of nine-inch solid shot. The *Tennessee* surrendered; Fort Gaines also hauled down its colors. On the east side of the Bay Fort Morgan held out, and was opened upon; after a bombardment of fifteen hours, it ran up the white flag. This closed the port of Mobile to English blockade runners. As the city was strongly fortified, it was not worth the investment.

CHAP.  
LXIV.  
1864.

Aug.  
23.

General Rosecrans was assigned to the command in Missouri, his headquarters at St. Louis. This State was infested by Southern secret societies, and so many soldiers had been sent to reinforce the armies in Northern Georgia that it was stripped of its defenders. Bands of bushwhackers were prowling over the State murdering and pillaging. In one instance they seized a railroad train on which were twenty-two unarmed and sick Union soldiers; these were taken out and shot! Sterling Price took the opportunity to invade the State in which he was once honored as Governor. General Pleasanton, with a force of Union cavalry, pursued and overtook him at Big Blue, crushed his force, and Price fled still further south, and made another stand at the Little Osage. There he was most disastrously defeated, losing all his guns and 1,000 prisoners. So eager were some of the Union soldiers to catch him that they rode one hundred and two miles in thirty-six hours. This was the last of the enemy's raids into Missouri; and the land had rest.

Jan.  
20.

Oct.  
22.

Oct.  
28.

Wilmington, N. C., was defended by Fort Fisher, which commanded the harbor. This place became most important for blockade runners, and the Government resolved to capture the forts and break up this contraband trade. The first expedition failed by mismanagement, and the second captured Fort Fisher, after hard fighting, with its garrison

Jan.  
15.

CHAP. and entire armament. Two days afterward the Confed-  
 XIV.  
 1864. erates blew up Fort Caswell. This gave the Union navy  
 complete control of the river, much to the grief of the  
 Feb. English blockade runners. The Union forces took posses-  
 22. sion of Wilmington.

When Sherman set out for the seaboard, Hood moved northward with an army of 35,000 men, he confronted Thomas's cavalry which checked him near Florence, Alabama, and continued to skirmish before him as he advanced. It was rumored that Hood intended to invade middle Tennessee; numerous expeditions both of Confederate and Federal cavalry were made during the months of October and November. Thomas, meanwhile, was fortifying Nashville, and having the control of the Cumberland river by means of eight gunboats he was at no loss for provisions. General Schofield, who fell back slowly in order to gain time, made a halt at Franklin, his men at once with spade and axe entrenching themselves. This had become a custom with the Union soldiers, their aptness enabled them to throw up breastworks in an almost incredibly short time. Hood assaulted these defenses of logs and earth several times, and was as often repulsed with great loss; he had 1,750 killed and 3,800 wounded while Schofield had only 189 killed and 1,033 wounded. Schofield fell back, in accordance with orders, to Nashville; the next day Hood's cavalry came up and the day after the infantry; their progress was arrested by a series of fortifications on the hills around the city.

Nov.  
30.

Dec.  
3.

Much uneasiness was felt in the country because Thomas did not attack Hood, and even Grant was on the eve of relieving him of command.

Dec.  
15.

When ready the sure but cautious Thomas moved out of Nashville, a heavy fog—which did not lift till noon—favoring secrecy, with all his troops in order. A heavy demonstration was made against Hood's right by General Stedman, by which movement Hood was deceived, and sent reinforcements from his left and center. Then at the proper moment

Generals Smith and Wilson swung round and attacked the weak point and carried every thing before them ; in one instance, the cavalry dismounted and carried a redoubt sabre in hand, then a second redoubt the same troops carried in the same manner. Then Montgomery Hill, Hood's most advanced position, was carried and many prisoners captured. Thus the Confederates were driven out of their original line of works and forced back along the base of Harpeth Hills, a new position. The result of the day was the capture of 1,200 prisoners and sixteen pieces of artillery, arms and wagons ; the Union loss was light.

CHAP.  
LXIV.  
1864.

The Federal army bivouacked on the field, and prepared to drive the enemy on the morrow. At 6 A.M. they drove back the enemy's skirmishers, and came upon a line of works constructed during the night on Overton's hill. Thomas soon arranged his men with a purpose, and felt of the enemy along their lines, then about 3 P.M. ordered an assault on Overton's hill. This was in full sight of Hood, who sent reinforcements from his right and center. The columns moved to the assault, and thoroughly drew the enemy's fire, but they were finally compelled to fall back to be reformed. The signal was given and then upon the Confederate right and center, thus weakened, rushed the Union forces under Smith and Schofield, and carried all before them with the greatest impetuosity. Meanwhile, the assaulting columns—having been reformed—for the second time moved upon Overton's hill, and carried it at the point of the bayonet. In this assault the colored troops behaved with great bravery. The whole Confederate line was broken beyond recovery; the pursuit continued till dark. This was a most disastrous defeat. From Hood's entrance till his retreat from Tennessee he lost at least 24,000 men and 53 pieces of artillery. The desertions from his ranks were enormous; so that the power of the Confederacy in the West was now broken forever.

Dec.  
16.

Breckenridge was detailed by the Confederate authorities to move into East Tennessee, especially to capture

Nov.  
13.

CHAP. Knoxville. He had some success at first, but General  
LXIV. Stoneman, then at Louisville, was sent to take command,  
1864. and in the short space of four days he drove the Confederate forces out of that portion of the State. The Union men of East Tennessee suffered terribly in this war, but with heroic courage, and amid disappointments the most discouraging, they maintained their integrity and loyalty to the government founded by their fathers. Nor would we depreciate, but rather extol, the courage, the perseverance and the self-denial of those other Southern men who, though misguided, met the Federals on many a battle-field, and with them displayed equal courage.

Unfortunately the mass of the Southern people, especially in the rural portions of the country, were not fully informed on the questions at issue. Certain leaders called into existence prejudices against the people of the free States, by representing them as hostile to the interests of the South, while at the same time they urged their own extreme theories in respect to State sovereignty; on these points this class of the Southern people had opportunity to hear only one side, and from these partial statements a portion of them came honestly to believe they had a right to secede from the Union. It was also a singular feature of this contest that so great numbers of private soldiers were drawn by conscription<sup>1</sup> from the ranks of those who never owned slaves, and who instinctively opposed a war designed to protect and extend that system; and who also, upon every occasion, when the question was fairly presented, voted against secession. Though thus forced into the army they fought bravely, and not till utterly exhausted did they succumb. The women of the South, likewise, displayed heroic fortitude, aided their own soldiers, and, in the midst of trials almost unparalleled, cheered them by the example of their own self-sacrificing labors.

<sup>1</sup> Hist. p. 943.

## CHAPTER LXV.

### LINCOLN'S ADMINISTRATION—CONTINUED.

Grant's design.—Platforms of Parties.—Second Inauguration.—Disposition of Union forces.—Lee's Plans—Battle of Five Forks.—Jefferson Davis Flees.—Lee Surrenders.—Richmond on Fire and Occupied.—Johnston's Surrender.—The Assassination.—The Funeral.—Andrew Johnson.—The Interview between Mr. Lincoln and Grant and Sherman.—Union Loss in the Rebellion.—Blockade Raised.—The Old Flag on Sumter.—Amnesty Proclamation—English Cruisers.—Alabama and Kearsage.—Lord John Russell's Protest.—Louis Napoleon.—No French Blockade Runners.—Provisional Governors.—Telegraph—Reconstruction.—Impeachment Trial.—Presidential Election.

WE now return to before Richmond. The victory of Thomas and the advance of Sherman toward the coast had given a sad aspect to the Confederate cause. It was Grant's design to keep Lee and his forces in and around Richmond till such time as he could be captured with his whole army, as he might possibly retreat by Lynchburg to south western Virginia or to western North Carolina, and protract the war still further.

The platforms of the two parties, Republican and Democratic, may be taken as exponents of their political views during this Presidential canvass. The former said: "We approve the determination of the government not to compromise with rebels, nor to offer any terms of peace except such as may be based upon an unconditional surrender of their hostility, and a return to their just allegiance to the Constitution and laws of the United States." And "as slavery was the cause of this rebellion," and used for its aid, the Convention expressed itself in favor of an amendment to the Constitution that should forever prohibit slavery in the United States. The Convention also approved the Emancipation Proclamation and the "employment as Union

CHAP  
LXIV.  
1864.

CHAP. soldiers of men hitherto held in slavery"; and "that the  
LXV. national faith, pledged for the redemption of the public  
1864. debt, must be kept inviolate."

The Democratic Convention resolved "That this Convention does explicitly declare that, after four years of failure to restore the Union by the experiment of war, that immediate efforts be made for a cessation of hostilities, with a view to a Convention of all the States, or other peaceable means to the end that at the earliest practicable moment peace may be restored on the basis of the Federal Union of the States." The Convention was silent in respect to slavery and the payment of the public debt. Mr. Lincoln was elected; only three States cast their votes for McClellan.

Why the Confederates did not submit with as good grace as they could after their defeat at Gettysburg and the fall of Vicksburg and Port Hudson—all within ten days—is one of the marvels of this marvelous Civil War. They were expecting the Democratic party to come into power in 1864, which they deemed more favorable to them. Says Childe: "The choice assured the election of Mr. Lincoln, and the defeat of General McClellan, who was regarded as more favorable to the Southerners." The inconsiderate boast was made again and again by some of their leaders that they would never submit, but as guerrillas take to the fastnesses of the mountains. Under the circumstances this was nothing short of madness. Had they been fighting against a people of different race and civilization, such sentiments might savor of patriotism.

On the Fourth of March Mr. Lincoln entered upon his second Presidential term. In the course of his inaugural he uses the following striking language: "Fondly do we hope, personally do we pray, that the scourge of war may speedily pass away. Yet if God wills it to continue until all the wealth piled by the bondman's two hundred and fifty years of unrequited toil shall be sunk, and until every

drop of blood drawn by the lash shall be paid by another drawn by the sword, as was said three thousand years ago, so, still it must be said, that the judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether." Further on he indicates his purpose, saying: "With malice toward none, with charity for all, with firmness in the right, as God gives us to see the right."

CHAP.  
LXV.  
1864.

Dispositions were now made of the Union forces that would in a short campaign break the Confederacy to pieces. Sheridan from the valley was to move toward Lynchburg, destroying James River Canal and railroads; and Stoneman to move from East Tennessee with a cavalry force of 5,000; one from Vicksburg, 7,000 or 8,000 strong, to sweep through Northern Mississippi; one from East Port, Miss., numbering 10,000; General Canby, from Mobile, with a mixed army of 38,000, to move on Tuscaloosa, Selma and Montgomery; and 5,000 cavalry were to start from Nashville. These movements were to be simultaneous as much as possible.

Of these, Sheridan was the first to move. He left Winchester with two divisions of cavalry each 5,000 strong. Passing up the valley, entered Staunton; the enemy retreated, and he pushed on in pursuit to find them in force under General Early in an intrenched position at Waynesboro. Without waiting to reconnoiter, he assaulted the works and carried them, and secured 1,500 prisoners and eleven pieces of artillery. Thence his men rode to Charlottesville, making havoc of railroads and bridges, toward Lynchburg and Richmond, moving along the James River Canal, destroying locks and cutting the banks to let out the water, then passed around and north of Richmond and joined the army before Petersburg. This was the most effective cavalry raid of the war.

1865.  
Feb.  
27.

Mar.  
3.

Mar.  
24.

Lee had laid plans to evacuate both Petersburg and Richmond, and unite near Danville with the force of Johnston, who was to fall back from before Sherman's advance. To cover this movement he made a vigorous attack on

**CHAP.** Grant's army, intending when it was in confusion to march  
**LXV.** rapidly by the Cox road toward Danville. Accordingly  
**1865.** Confederate troops under General Gordon, at daylight,  
**Mar.** furiously assaulted Fort Stedman, a point in the Union  
**25.** lines. The garrison were surprised by the suddenness of the  
attack, and were overpowered. The triumph was short.  
The neighboring Union forts poured in their shot so incessantly that in a short time Gordon's troops, 2,000 in all, were forced to surrender. General Meade now ordered forward the Second and Sixth Corps, who seized the Confederate well-intrenched picket line, securing a large number of prisoners. On the extreme Federal left a similar move was made with similar success. At 2 P.M. Lee made an effort to regain these lines, but his forces were repulsed in every attempt, and with great loss. To make a junction with Johnston was now impossible.

**Mar.** Grant at once resolved to attack the enemy and cut off  
**28.** their retreat by the Danville road. In preparation he secretly sent troops to his extreme left and gave orders to Sheridan to move on Dinwiddie Court House. Lee learned of these movements, and suspecting the design threw 17,000 of his best men to the support of his right. A severe storm of rain retarded operations for two days. Lee endeavored to use his accustomed tactics of throwing a large force upon a weak point, and in this battle of White Oak road he gained advantage at first, but only to be beaten off; and finally the Federal troops carried the very earthworks from which the enemy issued, and obtained possession of the road.

**Mar.** Lee had fortified Five Forks—a crossing where five  
**31.** roads meet—a strategic point of great importance, by which was his only way of retreat. Toward this place both armies made their way. When the Union cavalry reached Five Forks they found the enemy in position and were compelled to fall back. The Confederates at once pushed on vigorously, and fording a stream attacked Sheridan's left center and drove it back; but presently a fresh brigade, by

a gallant onset, checked their advance for a time. Sheridan dismounted his cavalry and managed them so skillfully as to repel the attack at every point. At dark the Confederates withdrew to their entrenchments at Five Forks, where Lee had concentrated his forces. The control of the coming battle was entrusted to Sheridan, who was on the field, by Generals Grant and Meade. The former promptly made dispositions of his troops, and in the early morning commenced the attack. The Union force under General Merritt drove the Confederates in front of them to the Five Forks skirmish line, then by impetuous attacks they were by two P.M. driven within their main works. Sheridan in his report says: "The enemy were driven from their strong line of works and completely routed; the Fifth Corps doubling up their left flank in confusion and the cavalry of General Merritt dashing on to the White Oak road, capturing their artillery and turning it upon them, and riding into their broken ranks so demoralized them that they made no serious stand after their line was carried, but took to flight in disorder." The Confederates were pursued six miles, and lost, besides the killed and wounded, between five and six thousand prisoners.

CHAP.  
LXV.  
1863.

Apr  
1.

The following night was made hideous by a constant bombardment along the whole Union line, and at 4 A.M. Sunday, a combined assault was successfully made upon the enemy's works and the South Side Railroad was seized. The Confederates, driven on their left by Meade and by Sheridan on their right, were broken, and in great confusion rushed in a mass westward by the main road along the bank of the Appomattox.

Apr  
2.

The following night was one of terror in Richmond. At the last moment the citizens were convinced that their city must fall into the hands of the Federal troops. Jefferson Davis had already gone. When in church in the afternoon he received a telegram from Lee, stating that his army had been driven from their fortifications, and Petersburg was occupied, and he must evacuate Richmond. Lee was

CHAP.  
LXV.

1865.

Apr.  
7.Apr.  
9.

moving toward the Danville road, in hopes to form a junction with Johnston, who, at his instance, had been put in command of the Confederates hastily concentrated to oppose Sherman. It was of vast importance that both Lee's and Johnston's armies should be captured and the war ended. At length, when Lee was completely surrounded, General Grant sent a note under a flag of truce to him, saying, "I regard it as my duty to shift from myself the responsibility of any further effusion of blood by asking of you the surrender of the army under your command." Several communications passed between the opposing generals. Finally Grant wrote, "The terms upon which peace can be had are well understood. By the South laying down their arms they will hasten that most desirable event, save thousands of human lives, and hundreds of millions of property not yet destroyed." An interview was held between the two commanders. The result was the Confederates laid down their arms, and were paroled as prisoners of war and permitted to return to their homes. "The victors were magnanimous; they abstained from every appearance of insult toward the vanquished. Abundant victuals were distributed to the prisoners, who were dying of hunger."

On Monday, April 4th, about noon, General Weitzel occupied Richmond, which was in a sad condition, on fire, and in the hands of thieves and robbers. The Union soldiers, as so often before, used their efforts to extinguish the flames and arrest the plundering. Both of these were accomplished by night, when peace and order once more reigned. Thus it was, from the wanton burning of Hampton village to the firing of Richmond, the private property of the Southern people suffered from the insane folly of her leaders. General Ewell, commanding the rear guard of the Confederate army, destroyed the bridges over the James river, and then, obeying his instructions to the letter, but against the earnest protest of the mayor and principal citizens, set on fire warehouses and flour-mills. Says Pollard,

Life of Lee, p. 321.

“The warehouses were fired; the flames seized on the neighboring buildings, and soon involved a wide and widening area. The conflagration passed beyond control, and in this mad fire, this wild, unnecessary destruction of private property, the citizens of Richmond had a fitting souvenir of the imprudence and recklessness of the departing administration.”

CHAP.  
LXV.

1865.

Jefferson Davis paused in his flight at Danville, Virginia, to issue a proclamation; after alluding to the abandonment of Petersburg and Richmond he says: “Virginia, with the help of the people, and by the blessing of Providence, shall be held and defended, and no peace ever be made with the infamous invaders of her territory.” A little more than a month afterward, he was captured while in disguise attempting to escape. He was brought to Fortress Monroe and there imprisoned under an indictment for treason, but his trial was postponed from time to time, and finally he was released on bail. When the Union troops arrived at Columbia, South Carolina, they found the place evacuated by Wade Hampton, who before leaving had ordered the cotton stored in the place to be burned, much of it in bales in the street; the Union soldiers labored to put out the fire and thought they were successful, but at night came up a high wind, the smouldering fire revived and spread in spite of the Provost Marshal and his soldiers; the greater portion of the beautiful village was burned.

May  
11.

1867.

General Sherman pressed on Johnston, and having received the news of the surrender of Lee, he moved from Goldsboro to Raleigh, the capital of the State, which place was occupied, much to the relief of the inhabitants, who were being pillaged by desperadoes from their own army. Johnston also had heard of Lee's surrender, and sent a flag of truce to Sherman asking an armistice preliminary to a surrender; a conference was held by the two commanders and an arrangement made for the surrender of Johnston's army; this was so far modified by the authorities at Washington as to conform to the conditions on which Lee

1865.  
Apr.  
17.

CHAP. LXV.  
1865. had surrendered. The other Confederate armies throughout the South submitted, Kirby Smith in Texas being the last; and thus the greatest Civil War in history collapsed.

Apr. 14. In the midst of the rejoicings at the downfall of Lee and capture of Richmond, and the sure anticipation of the fate of Johnston's army, the President was assassinated by John Wilkes Booth; a violent sympathiser with the Confederacy, though of Northern birth. Mr. and Mrs. Lincoln were seated in a private box in a theater when the fatal shot was fired, at about half past nine in the evening; Mr. Lincoln lingered till twenty minutes past seven the following morning. Never before did the nation manifest such intense grief as this event produced. The sorrow of the army was striking and remarkable; yet those noble men in the midst of their grief never whispered of retaliation in any form. Says General Johnston in relation to the bearing of the Union army after his own surrender, and just after the assassination became known: "The Union soldiers treated the people around them as they would have done those of Ohio or New York if stationed among them as their fellow citizens."<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Lincoln had endeared himself to all, even to great numbers of his political opponents, by his self devotion and kindness of heart, and that rare combination of talent and common sense which made him equal to any emergency in which he might be placed. In him the Southern people lost their best friend; and that truth the intelligent among them recognized. The remains of the Martyr President were carried to Springfield, Illinois, his former place of residence. It was an immense funeral procession, lasting for fourteen days; the people along the route thronging in crowds to pay honor to his memory. He was laid in his last resting place on the 4th of May.

It would seem the conspirators aimed at the same time to assassinate the members of the Cabinet. The attempt was made to kill Mr. Seward, Secretary of State, who at the

<sup>1</sup>Military Narrative, p. 419.

time was confined to his room by illness. The assassin failed though he wounded Mr. Seward, and also his son Frederick W., assistant Secretary.

CHAP  
LXV.  
1865.

## JOHNSON'S ADMINISTRATION.

Andrew Johnson, by virtue of his office as Vice-President, and in accordance with the law, assumed the duties of President of the United States. He was a native of Raleigh, North Carolina; thence removed to Greenville, Tennessee. In his youth his education had been much neglected, not even knowing the alphabet at the age of seventeen; but by his energy and perseverance he not only educated himself but won the respect of his fellow citizens, who elected him alderman, then Mayor; then their representative in the Legislature, then to Congress and finally Governor of the State.

Apr.  
15.

Booth escaped by leaping from the box to the stage, and then by a side door to the street, where a horse was in readiness, which he mounted and rode rapidly away, accompanied by an accomplice named Herold. He was pursued vigorously, and a few days afterward was traced to a barn in lower Maryland, and when it was surrounded he was ordered to surrender, but refused, though Herold gave himself up. Booth, in desperation, resolved to sell his life dearly, but before he could do harm he was shot down by Sergeant Corbett, one of his pursuers. Others of the conspirators were arrested, tried by court martial, four of them were found guilty and hanged, and the three accomplices were sentenced to imprisonment for life.

July  
7.

In an interview between President Lincoln and Generals Grant and Sherman, on board a steamer at City Point, Virginia, the two generals gave as their opinion that one more bloody battle would have to be fought before the power of the Confederacy could be broken. Mr. Lincoln, with deep emotion, exclaimed more than once, "That there had been blood enough shed, and asked if another

Mar.  
28.

**CHAP.** battle could not be avoided." The answer was, "That  
**LXV.** depended on Jefferson Davis and General Lee." During  
1865. the interim Mr. Lincoln said, "All he wanted for us was to defeat the opposing armies, and to get the men composing the Confederate armies back to their homes, at work on their farms and in their shops," "and restore all the men of both sections to their homes." In accordance with this sentiment General Grant, as soon as Lee surrendered, advised the reduction of the armies, that the men might return to civil life and their duties as citizens; he even did not visit Richmond, but hastened to Washington to facilitate the disbandment. During the last weeks of April and the first of May were witnessed many imposing scenes,—the returning soldiers undergoing their last reviews before leaving for their distant homes to be mustered out of the service, and to resume their duties as citizens. Such an imposing sight was never before seen of armies so large, the soldiers of which had so intelligent a view of the great principles for the establishment of which they had freely risked their lives in the perils of battle. They were greeted by ovations all along their route, and welcomed home as the saviors of the Union—that heirloom handed down from the fathers. Yet, also, how sad the occasion; amid the joy many an eye filled with tears and breast heaved with sorrow for the numbers who went at their country's call but who had laid down their lives on distant battle-fields. Many a regiment with its full complement of men which had set out inspired with hope and patriotism, came back with its banners draggled and battered by hostile balls, and perhaps with not more than one-fourth of its original number.

The following is a record copied from the lists at the War Office, at Washington, of the killed and wounded on the Union side during the Rebellion:

Killed.....	35,408
Died of wounds.....	49,203
Wounded.....	400,935

<sup>1</sup> Sherman's Memoirs, Vol. II., p. 328-7.

There has not been kept a perfect roll or list of the CHAP.  
Confederate killed and wounded, but the number is esti- LXV.  
mated at very nearly the same.

1865.

The nation incurred a debt of nearly three thousand  
million dollars, which has been so far paid as to amount 1902.  
now to about \$964,893,000,—or less than one thousand  
millions; the nation having paid more than two thirds of  
its debt in the last thirty-six years.

The Government, as soon as it was proper, raised the 1865.  
blockade of the Southern ports and reduced both the army  
and navy. The men of the army, in a remarkably short  
time, returned to their homes and families, and entered  
upon their civil duties with the self-respect natural to those  
who honestly have performed services in defense of their  
common country. The immense number of ships, now no  
longer wanted by the Government, were disposed of to the  
highest bidders; all property thus useless was sold, and the  
proceeds appropriated to paying the debt incurred.

Charleston was evacuated, and the Stars and Stripes  
once more floated over the city of nullification and seces-  
sion. The heart of the city had been burned during the  
bombardment, and “the rebel garrison, when leaving, fired  
the railroad depots, which fire had spread, and was only  
subdued by our troops after they had reached the city.”<sup>1</sup>  
On the fourth anniversary of the surrender of Fort Sumter  
the veritable flag—tattered and torn—which floated over  
“that fort during the rebel assault” was replaced by Major,  
now Major-General, Robert Anderson with imposing cere-  
monies, and was honored by a salute of one hundred  
national guns “from every fort and rebel battery that fired  
on Fort Sumter.”<sup>2</sup>

Feb.  
18.Apr.  
14.

President Johnson issued an amnesty proclamation, in  
which pardon was offered to all who would take an oath of  
allegiance to the United States, except certain specified  
classes who had held office in the cause of the Confederacy.

May  
29.<sup>1</sup> Sherman's Memoirs, Vol. II., p. 269.

Sherman's Memoirs, Vol. II., p. 230.

CHAP. On the 4th of July, 1868, the President granted pardon  
 LXV.  
 1865. unconditionally to all who were not at that time under indictment for treason, and finally, December 25th, he extended pardon to all without exception.

A number of cruisers, among which were the *Alabama*, *Florida*, and the *Georgia*, were fitted out in English ship-yards to prey on American commerce, under the flag of the Southern Confederacy—it not having a single port into which they could enter. These vessels were more or less manned by English seamen under Confederate captains, and into whatever port they entered in the British Empire they were welcomed, furnished supplies and armaments, and permitted to make repairs if needed, and also to enlist men if necessary. Though the English Government had issued a proclamation against the reception and aiding these vessels, yet it was a dead letter; neither did the Government itself make an efficient effort to enforce the law or to punish those who violated it. The *Alabama* was built expressly for this purpose, and was permitted to steam out of the Mersey, whence she went to the Azores, and there, by appointment, received her full armament of guns and stores sent from London. Raphael Semmes there took command, with a crew of 26 officers and 85 men, mostly British seamen. She, eluding her pursuers, roamed over the ocean for two years, destroying nearly seventy American vessels; storeships from Liverpool, by arrangement, furnishing her from time to time with war material and provisions. At length she appeared at Cherbourg in France, but the American Minister protested so strenuously that the French Government gave her permission to obtain coal and provisions, but not to use the national navy-yard in which to be repaired. Meanwhile, Captain John A. Winslow, of the United States gunboat *Kearsarge*—lying in a port of Holland—learned that the famous cruiser was at Cherbourg, and he immediately steamed out and soon appeared off that harbor, watching for the cruiser to put to sea. Semmes, finding he could not escape—as the *Kear-*

Aug.  
24.

1864.  
June  
10.

*sarge* was a swifter vessel than the *Alabama*,—proclaimed that he intended to fight his adversary.

CHAP.  
LXV.

The *Alabama* came out of port and the *Kearsage* steamed ahead seven miles, to get beyond French jurisdiction, and so far that the *Alabama* could not get back to the neutral line—three miles out—before he could overhaul her. At the right time the *Kearsage* turned and made for her antagonist, running at half-speed and only firing one gun for her two; coming within close range, her guns were shotted with shells of five seconds' fuse. The 11-inch shells of the *Kearsage* went through the *Alabama's* starboard and burst in the port side, and between decks, with terrific effect. Five English trained gunners were put on board the *Alabama* the evening before the action, but they seemed to lose their skill, as the *Kearsage* was scarcely injured. In an hour and ten minutes' time the *Alabama* was sinking beyond recovery, and Semmes hauled down his colors. A friendly English yacht was near and Captain Winslow asked the owner to aid in saving the crew of the sinking ship. Semmes was taken on board the yacht which slipped away to Southampton, where much sympathy was expressed for him and his cause.

1864.  
June  
19.

Under date of April 1, 1864, Lord John Russell, in a communication to Jefferson Davis, as President of the "so-called Confederacy," protested against his employing agents in England to obtain "vessels for war purposes against the United States." Had this protest been made three years before it might have been of benefit, but it was now too late; the mischief was done, and the United States government had a record of all the vessels destroyed by these English-built cruisers, and in due time would demand payment for the damage. This fact the English authorities had already learned.

Apr.  
1.

Though Louis Napoleon seems to have been desirous in some way to act as mediator to stop the "fratricidal strife," and was thought to be unfriendly to the Union, because it was a Republic, yet no Frenchman, as far as

CHAP. known, endeavored to advance his pecuniary interest by  
 LXV. running the blockade, and thus aiding the enemies of the  
 1865. Union by furnishing them the munitions of war.

The slavery question came up again, and Congress pro-  
 Dec. posed an amendment to the Constitution (Article XIII.),  
 18. by which slavery was to be forever abolished throughout  
 the Union. This was ratified by the States—three-fourths  
 of the number voting for its adoption—and became a por-  
 1866. tion of the organic law of the land. In order to protect  
 Apr. the Freedmen in their new position the Civil Rights Bill  
 9. was passed over President Johnson's veto.

This year a lawless attempt was made by a society known  
 as Fenians who wished to free Ireland from British sway by  
 invading Canada. They were driven back after some skir-  
 mishing. The President issued a proclamation denouncing  
 the enterprise as a violation of neutrality, and cautioning  
 all engaged in it to desist. General Meade, who was sent  
 to the frontier, soon put an end to the movement.

Professor Samuel F. B. Morse, a native of Massachu-  
 setts, then a resident of New York City, in whose univer-  
 1844. sity his experiments were first made, gave to the world the  
 electric telegraph. It is vain to conjecture the full benefit  
 that will accrue to the human family from this invention.  
 May it be a harbinger of peace, a link to unite the nations  
 in a common union of friendship! The first attempt to  
 1857. lay a cable across the Atlantic ocean succeeded, but for  
 some unknown cause it ceased to act after a few sentences  
 were transmitted. Nine years afterward another cable was  
 1866. laid, the enterprise owing its success to the energy of Cyrus  
 W. Field, of New York City. Other lines have been laid  
 connecting Europe with the United States, while others  
 have united us with our southern neighbors. Also sound-  
 ings have been made from San Francisco to Japan, across  
 1874. the Pacific, and a route on the bed of that ocean found  
 feasible for laying a cable.

1865, Congress passed a bill instructing the Director of  
 Mar. 3. the Mint to place the motto "IN GOD WE TRUST" upon

all coins issued whose size would admit the words—an appropriate motto for a Christian Nation.

CHAP.  
LXV.

1865.

The reconstruction of the Union—by which the seceding States were to be received back—was a most difficult question to settle; Congress and the President held almost opposite opinions on the subject.

Two words were used—Restoration and Reconstruction; these differed widely in their meanings. The first expressed the President's "policy," as he termed it; that was to receive the recent Confederate States back into the Union just as they had been before the war, taking no note of the relation now held to the General Government, and to the whole Nation, by those who were once slaves, but now free men, and as such citizens. The conditions which the President required were that the people of these States should acquiesce in the abolition of slavery, repudiate the Southern debt, and repeal the ordinances of secession. Reconstruction meant the readmission of the late Confederate States, with constitutional guarantees given by them, that the freedmen and their children should be recognized and treated as citizens.

The second session of the Thirty-eighth Congress, according to law, came to a close March 3d, 1865, and the Thirty-ninth would not assemble till December 4th. Meanwhile, in furtherance of his "policy" of restoration, the President appointed provisional governors over certain States recently in secession; to these officials he gave special instructions. From May 29th to July 13th he appointed seven governors to as many States. He directed them to have the people send delegates to conventions, which should repeal the ordinances of secession, acquiesce in the abolition of slavery, and repudiate the debt of the late "pretended Confederacy." If compliance was made with these conditions they were given to

CHAP. understand that at the next session of Congress their  
LXV. representatives would be admitted to the councils of  
1865. the Nation. This was an assumption on the part of the President. He had no authority as the executive to restore these States; that power belonged to the legislative branch of the Government, and as such under the Constitution this branch had always exercised that authority in admitting States. The undue haste in which the President pressed his "policy" of restoration, and the lack of courtesy shown the legislative branch of the Government, created alarm in the minds of the intelligent loyal men of the Nation. If the President deemed the readmission of these States so very urgent, why did he not call an extra session of Congress?

It is remarkable that in each instance of the death of the three Presidents who died while in office, the Vice-Presidents succeeding them in a singular manner changed their views in relation to the principles of the party which had elected them, and instead sympathized more or less with the opposing political organization.<sup>1</sup> The three Presidents who died in office were in principle of the same political party; for in reality we have had only two prominent parties in our political history, and these virtually preserved their own affiliations. The one in its principles descended under two different names—Whig and Republican—from that grand organization, the Federal, whose ideas of government were comprehensive and whose aims were national, and which under Washington established the Government and inaugurated our present policy of neutrality in respect to wars between foreign nations; the other—the Democratic—took its rise in opposition, especially to that policy, and without change of name<sup>2</sup> has come down to our own time, meanwhile

<sup>1</sup> Hist., p. 737.

<sup>2</sup> Hist., p. 583.

having its influence and share in moulding the destinies of the nation.

CHAP.  
LXV.

---

1866.

Andrew Johnson was a most violent denouncer of the principle of secession and of "unrepentant rebels." He was specially severe on "*treason*," proclaiming he "would make it odious." This announcement was made within a short time after he became President. Yet, during the recess of Congress, his administration of affairs connected with "restoration" was calculated, if not intended, to give those recently in secession every facility to carry out their plans. He also announced himself about the same time "a Moses to lead the colored people to freedom," but every bill adopted to aid them, or secure their rights as citizens, had to be passed *over his veto*—The Civil Rights Bill, The Freedmen's and Refugees Bill. The latter proposed to aid the "whites" who had been rendered destitute by the Civil War, as well as the freedmen. This bureau was of great advantage to both these classes, and being temporary in its operations, it was repealed as soon as the end was attained of putting these unfortunate people in the way of supporting themselves.

July  
16.

In accordance with the instructions of the President, the delegates were elected, and in due time assembled in conventions, and by vote complied with the three requirements already mentioned. The legislatures and Congressmen were as promptly elected; the former speedily meeting in session, chose United States senators, and nearly all were ready to enter upon their duties as participators in the national councils on the opening of the first session of the Thirty-ninth Congress.

1865,  
Dec. 4

According to the law hitherto in force in those States, "These conventions had no power either to adopt a new constitution or to amend an old one without the consent

CHAP. of the people." The latter had not been invited to vote on  
 LXV. them, nor were the writs issued in a legal form for the  
 1865. election of the Legislatures and the Congressmen. The  
 latter gentlemen, in order to enter upon their duties as  
 national legislators, were willing to waive these trifling  
 legal technicalities.

Another feature was quite remarkable. In the elections for representatives in the House as well as senators chosen, those who had been Union men, or loyal to the Government were rejected, and none but those who had been aiding or in sympathy with the Confederacy were elected. Numbers could not take the prescribed oath; many were unpardoned, and did not conceal their hostility to the Union. These sentiments seemed to simple minds to indicate that these would-be legislators had only made a change of base.

Several of the conventions in these States deprecated Congress making enactments in respect to the political condition of the freedmen. The coincidence is marked. President Johnson says in his first annual message to  
 1865, Congress: "In my judgment, the freedmen, if they  
 Dec. 4. show patience and manly virtues, will sooner obtain a participation in the elective franchise through the States than through the General Government;" again: "It is not competent for Congress to extend the elective franchise in the several States."

Meanwhile the Legislatures, which had been recently elected, entered upon their duties, and enacted laws adapted to the new order of things. It is very strange  
 1866. they displayed so little prudence; yet that fact gives a clearer manifestation of the animating spirit of which they seem to have been unconscious. The negro now being a freedman, they hastened to make laws in order to

utilize him. They were anxious to secure his labor, but upon their own terms; imposing conditions in respect to contracts, by laws which could be so construed as to bear hard upon the freedman, without affording corresponding facilities for him to obtain redress for injury or pay for his labor. These law-givers professed to be anxious lest the freedmen should become paupers; yet they, when slaves, of their own accord, for three or four years during the war had raised the crops and supported themselves and the families of their masters, while the latter were in the Confederate army. History records no instance of such disinterested loyalty; though they had heard of the proclamation of their freedom, yet they protected the defenceless women and children and committed no outrages;<sup>1</sup> this was a boon beyond price to their nominal owners. The moment the latter had the opportunity they repaid this kindness and loyalty by enacting laws that could be so interpreted as to hold these freedmen and their children in a modified form of slavery and ignorance forever.

CHAP.  
LXV.  
1866.

A brief summary of the salient points in the laws relating to freedmen, thus enacted in *ten* of the former Confederate States, may illustrate their spirit. These laws, however, became an occasion of good, for they compelled Congress, as a matter of justice and humanity, to secure in some permanent form the rights of the freedmen as citizens.

In accordance with these enactments the colored people were "eligible as witnesses," "where the rights of persons or property of persons of color shall be put in issue." "In all other civil and criminal cases such evidence shall be deemed inadmissible unless by *consent* of the parties

<sup>1</sup> Testimony of Senator Gordon of Georgia, vol. vi. p. 224. Report of Joint Committee on Outrages.

CHAP. of record." Under the term "vagrant"—which was  
 LXV. given a very liberal interpretation—young colored per-  
 1866. sons could be seized and bound by indenture or appren-  
 ticed—the male to the age of *twenty-one*, the female to  
*eighteen*, if their parents could not support them, or if  
 they were out of employment. These conditions seem  
 to have been decided by the magistrates alone. The  
 wishes of parents were apparently seldom recognized;  
 but in *securing* these indentured servants the *former*  
*owners*, under certain conditions, had the preference. By  
 law in one State—Louisiana—the *first ten days* in each  
 January were set apart for making contracts with the  
 freedmen for the year. If the latter engaged he was held  
 for the year, virtually without redress for wrong done  
 him. If injuries happened to the animals or accidents to  
 the implements he used, he was held responsible, or, in  
 other words, he was charged with the "wear and tear" of  
 the plantation. Several of these Legislatures forbade by  
 law colored men "to keep fire-arms of any kind"—the  
 penalty usually being a fine twice the value of the fire-  
 arm—and if the fine was not immediately paid, the de-  
 linquent was made to suffer.

Jan.  
24.

Under the interpretation of the term "vagrant" the  
 poor colored people—male and female—had scarcely any  
 redress. Gen. A. H. Terry, when in command, found  
 it necessary by order to forbid the enforcement of the  
 laws of the Virginia Legislature in relation to "vagrants."  
 The reason given: "wrongful combinations of employers  
 have been entered into for the purpose of depress-  
 ing the wages of freedmen below the real value of  
 their labor." In the State of Mississippi the law did not  
 "allow any freedman, free negro, or mulatto to rent or  
 lease any lands or tenements, except in incorporated  
 towns and cities, in which places the corporate authori-  
 ties shall control the same." A law of South Carolina

“provided that no person of color shall pursue or practise the art, trade, or business of an artisan, mechanic, or shop-keeper, employment or business on his own account, and for his own benefit, without a license.” The latter ranged in price from ten dollars to one hundred. No such license was required of a white man. A poll-tax of one dollar was levied on colored men over *twenty-one* years of age, and of fifty cents on colored females over *eighteen*. White females were not thus taxed. This code of South Carolina Gen. Daniel E. Sickles, when in command, uncere- moniously blotted out by a special order;<sup>1</sup> and Pro- visional Governor Perry felt constrained to dissolve the convention of the same State as a “revolutionary body,” even when assembled under the “Instructions.”

CHAP.  
LXV.  
1866.

Jan.  
17.

It is easy to see that the effect of this legislation would be to hold the freedmen and their posterity in a state very little above that of the old system of slavery. They were nominally free men, but could have no oppor- tunity of effectually defending themselves or their chil- dren under such laws from being ignorant serfs. These laws appear to have been enacted in the expectation that the President’s plan of restoration would be adopted, as they were all passed within six months. They reflected the animus of the ruling classes in the late Confederate States, and disclosed a reason for the non-adoption of the President’s theory of restoration. Had these Legislatures passed liberal laws in respect to the freedmen, treated them kindly, and endeavored to give them a chance to succeed in their new relation as citizens of their several communities, and of the whole Union, it is more than probable the President’s unauthorized action would have been overlooked to a great extent, and perhaps in a modi- fied form adopted. At the time there was an unusual

1865,  
Nov.  
22,  
to  
1866,  
May  
25.

<sup>1</sup> Condensed from McPherson’s *Handbook of Politics*, pp. 29–44.

CHAP. feeling of good will abroad among the people of the loyal  
LXV. States toward those who had been misguided or forced  
1866. into the Confederacy, and they were willing to make many  
concessions, hoping, meanwhile, the poor freedmen would  
now be permitted to have brighter prospects for them-  
selves and their children. But the spirit of these laws  
changed the entire aspect of the issue. This leniency  
of the loyal people has attracted the attention of for-  
eign writers. Says one, "The North, singularly merciful  
in her use of victory, inflicted no penalty on those whom  
she had defeated."<sup>1</sup>

In respect to the action of the President, it was argued he had no power except under the laws as chief Executive. These laws gave him as commander-in-chief of the army no authority over the organization of territories nor of these recent Confederate States. It was simply his duty to restore order, to protect the people against violence until provision should be made by Congress for their government. These States were still under martial law, and the provisional governors could exercise military authority merely to preserve order. The President as the chief military authority could only depute similar authority to his subordinates. He might "recognize the people of any State as having resumed the relations of loyalty to the Union," and on that supposition act in his military capacity. This was far different from taking initiative measures to restore States which had been in secession, and were still under martial law, "to all the rights and privileges of the Union." The latter "process" would be an encroachment upon a co-ordinate branch of the Government. Under the Constitution Congress itself alone has the authority to secure to each State of the Union a "republican form of government."

<sup>1</sup> Mackenzie's *Hist. of the Nineteenth Century*, p. 77.

This duty cannot be assigned to the War Department; hence military governors could not establish State governments. Congress, as a rule, authorized by an "enabling act" territories to form constitutions and apply for admission into the Union, and if the conditions are complied with they are received as States.

CHAP.  
LXV.  
1866  
and  
1867.

On the other hand it was argued that these States, after they had repealed the ordinances of secession, were back in the Union just as they were before the firing on Sumter;<sup>1</sup> then again that these ordinances in the first instance were null and void, and therefore during the conflicts of the last four years they were really in the Union, but in an insurrectionary state, and when order was restored their State sovereignty was interfered with in their not being as such recognized.

In this controversy, which lasted for two years, the framers of the laws quoted had the moral support of those in the North who had not been specially anxious that the loyal part of the people should bring the secessionists into obdience to the Government. This influence encouraged the original disunionists during the late Civil War, and after its close, to resist reconstruction except in the form of restoration, that would leave the freedmen at their mercy, and thus retard the progress of the country for an indefinite period.

The question in respect to the future condition of the freedmen was far more important than *abstract theories* as to whether or not the Confederate States were in the Union as soon as their last army surrendered. It was evident from the spirit of the laws referred to, and the tone of popular feeling which dictated them, the design

<sup>1</sup> Majority and Minority Reports of the Joint Committee on Reconstruction, *Handbook of Politics*, pp. 84-104.

CHAP. LXV.  
1867. was to hold the colored race in a sort of peonage. Under the slave code it was a penal offence to teach them to read and write; this law was blotted out, but still the prospect of improvement derived from schools under the conditions was almost hopeless. Were these four million of the negro race to be left subject to the unjust laws of their recent nominal owners? They would now be reckoned citizens of the Union, and as such represented in the national councils, but would have no voice in the selection of their own representatives. This would be even more unjust to the people of the whole Nation than the former arrangement of representation under the system of slavery. This evil, however, was trifling when compared with an infinitely greater one—that of keeping the colored race in a state of helpless ignorance and virtual slavery. Under such depressing influences they must become necessarily a hindrance to material progress, and thus affect the interests of the whole Nation; and in proportion as their numbers increased would increase these difficulties. This is an economical view of the subject; but true statesmanship takes notice of both moral and political questions as influencing the future of communities.

It was essential for the harmonious action of the Government that the laws pertaining to suffrage should be uniform throughout the Union. The remedy, therefore, must be applied in such manner as to be the same in effect throughout the whole United States. It became a matter of expediency as well as an alternative to give the colored race the ballot, that they might have the means thus far to protect themselves from unfriendly legislation, the *form* in which their individual rights had just been assailed. The freedman was an illiterate—enforced to be such—but illiterate whites were not disfranchised; for the time he was ignorant—perhaps more so than a majority of the illiterate whites.

The fourteenth and fifteenth amendments of the Constitution apply to all the States of the Union. If the State of New York should by an act of her people deprive her German or Irish population of the right of suffrage, she could be legally deprived in the same proportion of her representatives in Congress; no more, no less than South Carolina could be if she denied her colored population the right of suffrage. The Constitution is thus designed to protect all classes of citizens, for it reads (Fourteenth amend., sec. 2): "When the right to vote is denied to any of the male inhabitants of such [a] State, the basis of representation therein shall be reduced in the proportion which the number of such male citizens shall bear to the whole number of male citizens twenty-one years of age in such State."

CHAP.  
LXV.

1868.  
1870.

Congress took measures to reconstruct the Union on principles of equity, that if fully carried out would secure the civil rights of all citizens. They first passed (over the President's veto) "The enabling act to provide efficient governments for the insurrectionary States." Then "the Registration Act" (based on the "Civil Rights Bill") by which the provisional governors were directed in their several States to order a complete registration of all the male citizens over twenty-one years of age, without reference to color or former condition of life. This registration was to be completed by September 1st, before the election, which was to be held for delegates to conventions to form State constitutions. Under this "act" the colored men were recognized as citizens, and, having registered soon after as such, for the first time, voted.

1867,  
Mar.  
23.

Sept.  
1.

Why may not reconstruction on principles of right and justice, be noted in our history as the starting-point for the continuous advancement of the material progress

CHAP. of the Nation? It was then that the Union was totally  
LXV. freed from the incubus of slavery — only its *débris*  
1867. of ignorance and improvidence remaining; these two evils in a generation or two can be overcome. The colored people in their sphere as laborers are essential in the South to furnish their share in the more perfect advancement of the whole country, and this act of justice encourages them to prepare themselves and their children to fulfill the duties of their station, and by education—intellectual and moral—and by industry, make their lives successful. The reconstruction measures thus founded on justice and equity are comprehensive in their character, and in the end must have a beneficial influence upon the Nation.

The slaves of the Roman empire were originally prisoners of war, but they belonged to the white race, and when they became freedmen, they took their places as citizens on an equality; to them their misfortunes were not attributed as a disqualification. The case of the negro is different from that of all others in history; never before had a people of a different origin—a race physically so distinct and placed in so inferior condition—with the depressing influence of six generations of servitude, been made citizens; they having been excluded by law, as far as possible, from the benefits of the advancing civilization during the last two hundred years.

Reconstruction was a result of the humanizing influence of Christianity in the minds of the loyal portion of the American people; they would not sanction the holding of the freedmen in a condition bordering on that of their former bondage, and in which they could not make available the means of elevating themselves and their children.

In due time the seceded States adopted the requisite amendments, and were readmitted to the Union, and their senators and representatives to their seats in Congress. The last to come in were the States of North and South Carolina, Louisiana, Arkansas, Georgia, Alabama, Texas, and Florida. Some of these had been unrepresented in Congress for seven years.

CHAP.  
LXV.  
1867.

Nebraska was admitted into the Union as a State, making the thirty-seventh. The same year Alaska was purchased from Russia for the sum of \$7,200,000 in gold. This immense region of 500,000 square miles is valuable for its fisheries, and for seal skins, and also for its harbors on the Pacific coast. Near the end of the nineteenth century rich gold deposits were found in the Klondike section, attracting many persons to that region.

Congress had passed a law entitled The Tenure of Office Bill, by which the consent of the Senate was necessary to the removal from office of any officer whose nomination by the President had to be confirmed by that body. The President, in violation of this law and during the recess of Congress, desired to remove that most efficient officer Edwin M. Stanton, the Secretary of War, from his position. Great political excitement grew out of these proceedings, which resulted in the impeachment of the President, by a resolution of the House of Representatives, "for high crimes and misdemeanors." The trial ended in his acquittal, as a two-thirds vote of the Senate failed, by one vote, to pronounce him guilty. This is the only instance of a President of the United States being impeached.

An important treaty was made with the Chinese Empire, by which religious toleration was guaranteed to citizens of the United States residing in China, and the same privilege was extended to Chinese residents in this coun-

CHAP. try. This treaty was followed by an embassy from that  
LXV. empire to the United States, which it is hoped will have  
1867. a most favorable influence upon the policy of that se-  
cluded empire.

In the election for President the Republican party nominated for the presidency and vice-presidency General U. S. Grant of Illinois, and Schuyler Colfax of Indiana, and the Democratic party, Horatio Seymour of New York, and General Francis P. Blair, Jr., of Missouri. The former were elected, and General Grant was inaugurated President 4th of March, 1869.

## HISTORICAL MEMORANDA

---

# HISTORICAL MEMORANDA

---

# **HISTORICAL MEMORANDA**

---

## **HISTORICAL MEMORANDA**

---

# HISTORICAL MEMORANDA

## HISTORICAL MEMORANDA

---

## HISTORICAL MEMORANDA

---

## HISTORICAL MEMORANDA

---

## HISTORICAL MEMORANDA

---

## **HISTORICAL MEMORANDA**

---

# **HISTORICAL MEMORANDA**

---

# HISTORICAL MEMORANDA

# **HISTORICAL MEMORANDA**

---

## HISTORICAL MEMORANDA









NORTHEAST TECHNICAL COMMUNITY  
COLLEGE-LIBRARY

